

## Scripture Lessons from War and Warriors

### *Writer's Note*

2021 Update: Web sites were current at the time of writing or designated unavailable.

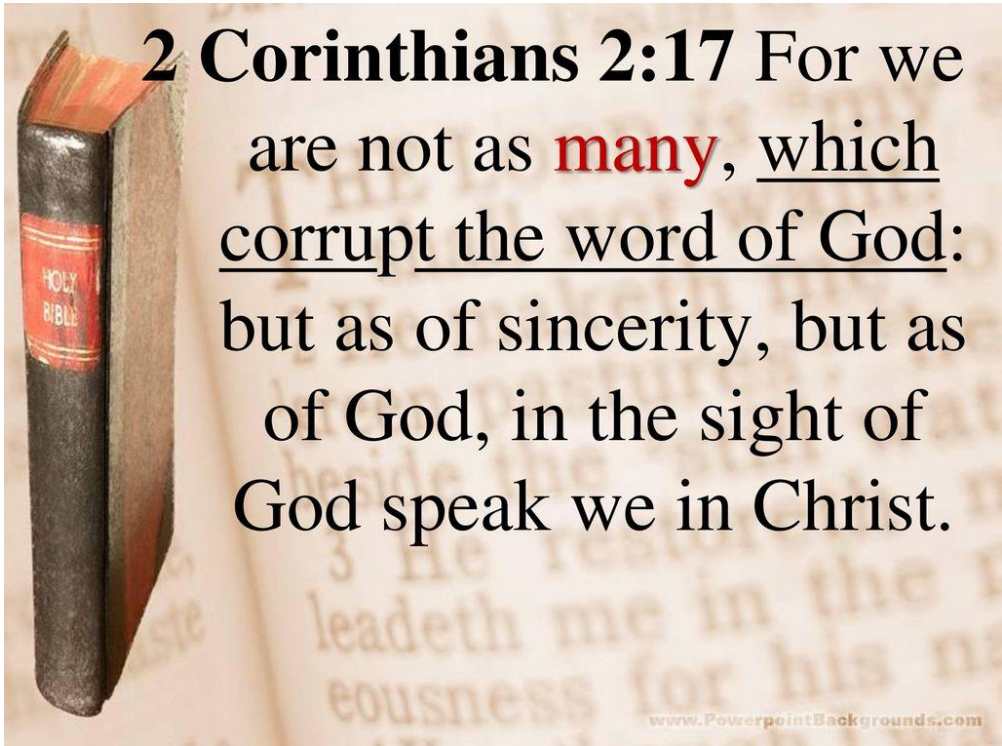
This work is a compilation of historical studies about serving warriors who did ***“war a good warfare”*** 1 Timothy 1:18 from which scripture lessons have been derived that it is hoped will prove to be beneficial to the reader. This writer's final authority The 1611 Holy Bible has been quoted throughout for scripture, with no intentional deviation therefrom, with good reason<sup>1</sup>:

*“I know where I could lay my hands on one [a Bible]. A quid. It's got gold lettering on the back and it's the Authorised Version. No rubbish!”*

Private Joey Walker

‘Wilmington-on-Sea Platoon,’ Home Guard

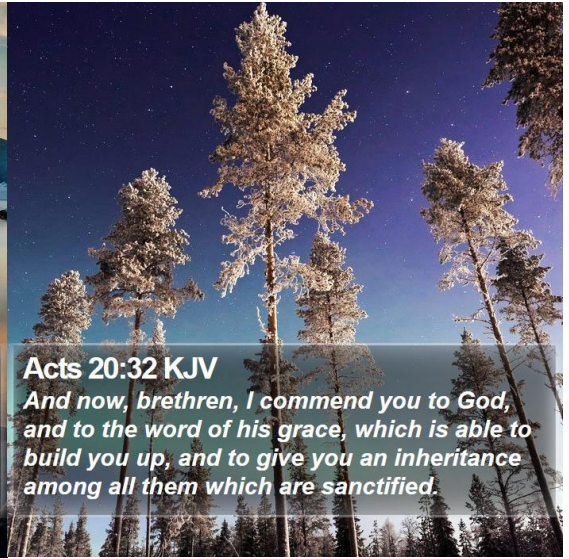
*Dad's Army*



<b>Contents</b>	<b>Page</b>
<b>Dedication</b>	3
<b>Joab the Rogue, Eliam the Royalist</b>	4
<b><i>St George of Lydda</i></b>	14
<b>King's Man Sir Renaud de Carteret III</b>	19
<b>Voice From The Ranks – A Testimony of the Crimea</b>	26
<b><i>“STAND FIRM, YE BOYS FROM MAINE”</i></b>	33
<b>Mother</b>	37
<b><i>“I am just going outside and may be some time”</i></b>	41
<b>Pocket Testament League</b>	49
<b>The Angels of Mons</b>	50
<b>The Lord - The Unknown Warrior</b>	53
<b>ANZAC Day April 25<sup>th</sup> and The Incomparable 29<sup>th</sup></b>	69
<b>Captain Siegfried Sassoon at the Somme</b>	72
<b>The Redeemer</b>	83
<b>Cobbers</b>	86
<b>SATAN THE DEVIL</b>	90
<b>Flanders Fields 1917 and God's Son</b>	93
<b>1918 and God's Deliverance</b>	96
<b>STALINGRAD – WHY GOD HAD FORSAKEN THEM</b>	100
<b>D-Day, Normandy June 6<sup>th</sup> 1944 and God's Conquest</b>	116
<b>Pilot Officer Cyril Barton VC</b>	122
<b>Pilot Officer Andrew Mynarski VC</b>	127
<b>Lieutenant Terry Waters GC, George Cross</b>	131
<b>The Shepherd</b>	134
<b>British Values by Those Who Valued Them</b>	137
<b>Faith on the Frontline – Some Observations</b>	149
<b>Sergeant Daniel Militello – Testimonial Letter</b>	155
<b>Jersey WW2 Occupation</b>	156
<b>Final Conclusion</b>	159
<b>References</b>	160

## Dedication

This work is dedicated to the men and women of Britain's armed forces and those of her allies, past, present and future who have or will have unashamedly and steadfastly stood for belief in the 1611 Holy Bible as "*the book of the LORD*" Isaiah 34:16 "*the scripture of truth*" Daniel 10:21 "*the royal law*" James 2:8 and "*All scripture*" that "*is given by inspiration of God*" 2 Timothy 3:16 likewise steadfast in their certain belief that no other book is<sup>2</sup>.



## Joab the Rogue, Eliam the Royalist

*“Whoso despiseth the word shall be destroyed:  
but he that feareth the commandment shall be rewarded”* Proverbs 13:13

# David's Mighty Men



*“These also are the chief of the mighty men whom David had, who strengthened themselves with him in his kingdom, and with all Israel, to make him king, according to the word of the LORD concerning Israel”*

1 Chronicles 11:10

## Rogue and Royalist, Each a Role Model

Joab and Eliam were both among David's *“men of war”* 1 Chronicles 12:38 but only Eliam was one of the elite warriors known as *“the mighty men”* 2 Samuel 23:8. See graphic<sup>3</sup>. Joab had the *potential* to qualify for *“the mighty men”* but he never did. The reason is that Joab was a rogue while Eliam was a royalist. Nevertheless, *both* men are role models for today's believer, as will be shown.

## The Devil - Evil but Admirable

This writer was told many years ago that the devil knows more about scripture than any Christian. That statement is true but it was intended to dissuade believers from focusing on *“the words of God”* plural Numbers 24:4, 16, 1 Chronicles 25:5, Psalm 107:11, John 3:34, Revelation 17:17 about which dissension might arise over different Bible versions. Believers are thereby pressured into thinking only in terms of the fundamentals as set out in, say, a church constitution and over which therefore no dissension can arise.

Yet although *“your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour”* 1 Peter 5:8, much about the devil is admirable, even if for the wrong reasons:

*The devil’s command of scripture is admirable.*

No-one should be put off from that reality by means of the underhanded tactic of guilt by association. The devil knew to cut out *“to keep thee in all thy ways”* Psalm 91:11 in tempting the Lord Jesus Christ, Matthew 4:6, Luke 4:10-11.

The Christian should aim for the best possible command of the scriptures such that he can refer to them 24/7.

***“And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up”*** Deuteronomy 6:6-7.

*The devil’s boldness is admirable.*

The devil is bold even with God.

***“Then Satan answered the LORD, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought? Hast not thou made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he hath on every side? thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land. But put forth thine hand now, and touch all that he hath, and he will curse thee to thy face”*** Job 1:9-11.

***“And Satan answered the LORD, and said, Skin for skin, yea, all that a man hath will he give for his life. But put forth thine hand now, and touch his bone and his flesh, and he will curse thee to thy face”*** Job 2:4-5.

The Christian should aim for boldness with God.

***“Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need”*** Hebrews 4:16.

*The devil’s obedience is admirable.*

It is immediate, total and without objection such as *“Lord, me first”* Luke 9:59, 61 or *“Not so, Lord”* Acts 10:14.

**“And the LORD said unto Satan, Behold, all that he hath is in thy power; only upon himself put not forth thine hand. So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD”** Job 1:12.

**“And the LORD said unto Satan, Behold, he is in thine hand; but save his life. So went Satan forth from the presence of the LORD, and smote Job with sore boils from the sole of his foot unto his crown”** Job 2:6-7.

The Christian should aim for obedience to God that is immediate, total and without objection.

**“And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them”** Matthew 21:6.

*The devil’s persistence, indeed steadfastness is admirable.*

**“your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour”** 1 Peter 5:8. The devil works at stalking the intended victims 24/7. He is steadfast in that respect.

The Christian should be steadfast in serving the Lord Jesus Christ.

**“Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord”** 1 Corinthians 15:58.

In sum, the Christian has a role model even in his enemy for command of scripture, boldness, obedience and persistence. Likewise, the Christian has a role model in Joab, his roguery notwithstanding.

### **Joab - Evil but Admirable**

*Joab was admirable for his command of scripture<sup>4</sup>.*

**“Then Joab sent and told David all the things concerning the war; And charged the messenger, saying, When thou hast made an end of telling the matters of the war unto the king, And if so be that the king’s wrath arise, and he say unto thee, Wherefore approached ye so nigh unto the city when ye did fight? knew ye not that they would shoot from the wall? Who smote Abimelech the son of Jerubbesheth? did not a woman cast a piece of a mill-stone upon him from the wall, that he died in Thebez? why went ye nigh the wall? then say thou, Thy servant Uriah the Hittite is dead also”** 2 Samuel 11:18-21 with Judges 9:52-54.

*Joab was admirable for his boldness.*

Joab was bold in initiative, in leadership in battle and even before the king.

**“And David said on that day, Whosoever getteth up to the gutter, and smiteth the Jebusites...he shall be chief and captain...”** 2 Samuel 5:8.

**“And David said, Whosoever smiteth the Jebusites first shall be chief and captain. So Joab the son of Zeruiah went first up, and was chief”** 1 Chronicles 11:6.



“When Joab saw that the front of the battle was against him before and behind, he chose of all the choice men of Israel, and put them in array against the Syrians: And the rest of the people he delivered into the hand of Abishai his brother, that he might put them in array against the children of Ammon. And he said, If the Syrians be too strong for me, then thou shalt help me: but if the children of Ammon be too strong for thee, then I will come and help thee. Be of good courage, and let us play the men for our people, and for the cities of our God: and the LORD do that which seemeth him good. And Joab drew nigh, and the people that were with him, unto the battle against the Syrians: and they fled before him. And when the children of Ammon saw that the Syrians were fled, then fled they also before Abishai...” 2 Samuel 10:9-14.

“And Joab came into the house to the king, and said, Thou hast shamed this day the faces of all thy servants, which this day have saved thy life, and the lives of thy sons and of thy daughters, and the lives of thy wives, and the lives of thy concubines...Now therefore arise, go forth, and speak comfortably unto thy servants: for I swear by the LORD, if thou go not forth, there will not tarry one with thee this night: and that will be worse unto thee than all the evil that befell thee from thy youth until now. Then the king arose, and sat in the gate. And they told unto all the people, saying, Behold, the king doth sit in the gate. And all the people came before the king: for Israel had fled every man to his tent” 2 Samuel 19:5, 7-8.

Note of course that Joab was *not* admirable for his obedience or his steadfastness. He disobeyed his Commander-in-Chief, committed serial murder and rebelled against his word “for the king’s word was abominable to Joab” 1 Chronicles 21:6. See these scriptures.

“And Abner said unto David, I will arise and go, and will gather all Israel unto my lord the king, that they may make a league with thee, and that thou mayest reign over all that thine heart desireth. And David sent Abner away; and he went in peace...Then Joab came to the king, and said, What hast thou done? behold, Abner came unto thee; why is it that thou hast sent him away, and he is quite gone? Thou knowest Abner the son of Ner, that he came to deceive thee, and to know thy going out and thy coming in, and to know all that thou doest. And when Joab was come out from David, he sent messengers after Abner, which brought him again from the well of Sirah: but David knew it not. And when Abner was returned to Hebron, Joab took him aside in the gate to speak with him quietly, and smote him there under the fifth rib, that he died, for the blood of Asahel his brother” 2 Samuel 3:21, 24-27.

“And the man said unto Joab, Though I should receive a thousand shekels of silver in mine hand, yet would I not put forth mine hand against the king’s

son: for in our hearing the king charged thee and Abishai and Ittai, saying, Beware that none touch the young man Absalom...Then said Joab, I may not tarry thus with thee. And he took three darts in his hand, and thrust them through the heart of Absalom, while he was yet alive in the midst of the oak. And ten young men that bare Joab's armour compassed about and smote Absalom, and slew him" 2 Samuel 18:12, 14-15.

"And say ye to Amasa, Art thou not of my bone, and of my flesh? God do so to me, and more also, if thou be not captain of the host before me continually in the room of Joab...But Amasa took no heed to the sword that was in Joab's hand: so he smote him therewith in the fifth rib, and shed out his bowels to the ground, and struck him not again; and he died..." 2 Samuel 19:13, 20:10.

"And he conferred with Joab the son of Zeruiah, and with Abiathar the priest: and they following Adonijah helped him" 1 Kings 1:7.

Prompting his crimes, Joab's disobedience to and rebellion against "the king's word...abominable to Joab" 1 Chronicles 21:6 really spelled his end for "Whoso despiseth the word shall be destroyed..." Proverbs 13:13. See these scriptures.

"Moreover thou knowest also what Joab the son of Zeruiah did to me, and what he did to the two captains of the hosts of Israel, unto Abner the son of Ner, and unto Amasa the son of Jether, whom he slew, and shed the blood of war in peace, and put the blood of war upon his girdle that was about his loins, and in his shoes that were on his feet. Do therefore according to thy wisdom, and let not his hoar head go down to the grave in peace" 1 Kings 2:5-6.

"Then tidings came to Joab: for Joab had turned after Adonijah, though he turned not after Absalom. And Joab fled unto the tabernacle of the LORD, and caught hold on the horns of the altar. And it was told king Solomon that Joab was fled unto the tabernacle of the LORD; and, behold, he is by the altar. Then Solomon sent Benaiah the son of Jehoiada, saying, Go, fall upon him. And Benaiah came to the tabernacle of the LORD, and said unto him, Thus saith the king, Come forth. And he said, Nay; but I will die here. And Benaiah brought the king word again, saying, Thus said Joab, and thus he answered me. And the king said unto him, Do as he hath said, and fall upon him, and bury him; that thou mayest take away the innocent blood, which Joab shed, from me, and from the house of my father...So Benaiah the son of Jehoiada went up, and fell upon him, and slew him: and he was buried in his own house in the wilderness" 1 Kings 2:28-31, 34. Note that clinging to the altar showed that even in his desperation, Joab's command of scripture was such that though it didn't help him, he knew Exodus 21:14 "But if a man come



presumptuously upon his neighbour, to slay him with guile; thou shalt take him from mine altar, that he may die."

Joab was nevertheless admirable for his dedication in producing men "expert in war" 1 Chronicles 12:33, 35, 36, Song of Solomon 3:8.

The men of Benjamin were noted for prowess in battle.

"And the children of Benjamin came forth out of Gibeah, and destroyed down to the ground of the Israelites that day twenty and two thousand men...And Benjamin went forth against them out of Gibeah the second day, and destroyed down to the ground of the children of Israel again eighteen thousand men; all these drew the sword" Judges 20:21, 25.

The men trained by "the general of the king's army...Joab" 1 Chronicles 27:34 beat them soundly.

"And Abner the son of Ner, and the servants of Ishbosheth the son of Saul, went out from Mahanaim to Gibeon. And Joab the son of Zeruiah, and the servants of David, went out, and met together by the pool of Gibeon; and they sat down, the one on the one side of the pool, and the other on the other side of the pool. And Abner said to Joab, Let the young men now arise, and play before us. And Joab said, Let them arise...And there was a very sore battle that day; and Abner was beaten, and the men of Israel, before the servants of David...And Joab returned from following Abner; and when he had gathered all the people together, there lacked of David's servants nineteen men and Asahel. But the servants of David had smitten of Benjamin, and of Abner's men, so that three hundred and threescore men died" 2 Samuel 2:12-14, 17, 30-31.

Though Joab was not one of "the mighty men" 2 Samuel 23:8 no fewer than *three* men close to him were. That was a distinct achievement among David's "men of war" 1 Chronicles 12:38.

"And Abishai, the brother of Joab, the son of Zeruiah, was chief among three. And he lifted up his spear against three hundred, and slew them, and had the name among three" 2 Samuel 23:18 with 1 Chronicles 11:20.

"Asahel the brother of Joab was one of the thirty; Elhanan the son of Dodo of Bethlehem" 2 Samuel 23:24 with 1 Chronicles 11:26.

"Zelek the Ammonite, Naharai the Beerothite, armourbearer to Joab the son of Zeruiah" 2 Samuel 23:37.

Note finally that unlike King David who dwelt "in the city of David" 1 Chronicles 11:7, Joab dwelt "in his own house in the wilderness" 1 Kings 2:34. There Joab no doubt dedicated himself 24/7 to producing men "expert in war" 1 Chronicles 12:33, 35, 36, Song of Solomon 3:8 and where Joab accustomed these men to campaign conditions as Uriah said "my lord Joab, and the

servants of my lord, are encamped in the open fields” 2 Samuel 11:11. Joab also practised on-the-job training with “ten young men that bare Joab’s armour” 2 Samuel 18:15. The training paid off. See 2 Samuel 2:12-14, 17, 30-31 above. The Lord too practised on-the-job training. “And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach” Mark 3:14.

The Christian can and should therefore do likewise as Paul exhorted Timothy. “And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also” 2 Timothy 2:2.

### **Eliam the Royalist – Righteous and Admirable**

*Eliam Wronged Manifold Manifested* “the patience of Job” James 5:11

Note these scriptures.

“And David sent and enquired after the woman. And one said, Is not this Bathsheba, the daughter of Eliam, the wife of Uriah the Hittite? And David sent messengers, and took her; and she came in unto him, and he lay with her; for she was purified from her uncleanness: and she returned unto her house” 2 Samuel 11:3.

“And it came to pass in the morning, that David wrote a letter to Joab, and sent it by the hand of Uriah. And he wrote in the letter, saying, Set ye Uriah in the forefront of the hottest battle, and retire ye from him, that he may be smitten, and die...And the men of the city went out, and fought with Joab: and there fell some of the people of the servants of David; and Uriah the Hittite died also” 2 Samuel 11:14-15, 17.

“And when the wife of Uriah heard that Uriah her husband was dead, she mourned for her husband” 2 Samuel 11:26.

“Howbeit, because by this deed thou hast given great occasion to the enemies of the LORD to blaspheme, the child also that is born unto thee shall surely die. And Nathan departed unto his house. And the LORD struck the child that Uriah’s wife bare unto David, and it was very sick...And it came to pass on the seventh day, that the child died” 2 Samuel 12:14-15, 18.

“And when Ahithophel saw that his counsel was not followed, he saddled his ass, and arose, and gat him home to his house, to his city, and put his household in order, and hanged himself, and died, and was buried in the sepulchre of his father” 2 Samuel 17:23.

David’s sin with Bathsheba wronged Eliam manifold. Eliam lost his son-in-law, his grandson and his own father and saw his daughter in deep distress mourning for his son-in-law whom his own Commander-in-Chief had murdered and whom Nathan soundly rebuked as follows.

**“Wherefore hast thou despised the commandment of the LORD, to do evil in his sight? thou hast killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword, and hast taken his wife to be thy wife, and hast slain him with the sword of the children of Ammon”** 2 Samuel 12:9.

Moreover, Eliam never received one word of regret from David for the distress he brought on his servant that the scripture records. Yet Eliam was like Job. **“In all this Job sinned not, nor charged God foolishly”** Job 1:22.

Herein is the role model example for the Christian as Peter explains.

**“For this is thankworthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. For what glory is it, if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God”** 1 Peter 2:19-20.

Eliam Righteous, a Royalist Faithful to **“royal majesty”** 1 Chronicles 29:25

Note these scriptures.

**“And Absalom sent for Ahithophel the Gilonite, David’s counsellor, from his city, even from Giloh, while he offered sacrifices. And the conspiracy was strong; for the people increased continually with Absalom...And one told David, saying, Ahithophel is among the conspirators with Absalom. And David said, O LORD, I pray thee, turn the counsel of Ahithophel into foolishness”** 2 Samuel 15:12, 31.

**“And when king David came to Bahurim, behold, thence came out a man of the family of the house of Saul, whose name was Shimei, the son of Gera: he came forth, and cursed still as he came. And he cast stones at David, and at all the servants of king David; and all the people and all the mighty men were on his right hand and on his left”** 2 Samuel 16:5-6.

**“These be the names of the mighty men whom David had...Eliphelet the son of Ahasbai, the son of the Maachathite, Eliam the son of Ahithophel the Gilonite”** 2 Samuel 23:8, 34.

Eliam’s own father joined the conspirators under Absalom against **“David the king”** 1 Samuel 21:11, 1 Chronicles 17:16, 24:31, 26:26, 28:2, 29:1, 9, 29, 2 Chronicles 2:12, 7:6, Matthew 1:6 twice. However, Eliam was royally righteous in his faithfulness in following the **“royal majesty”** 1 Chronicles 29:25 of **“David the king”** though against his own father and leaving his beloved daughter tarrying **“by the stuff”** 1 Samuel 30:24 at home. Eliam was then among those on the receiving end of vicious taunts from **“the king’s enemies”** Psalm 45:5. He was like Levi **“Who said unto his father and to his mother, I have not seen him; neither did he acknowledge his brethren, nor knew his own children: for they have observed thy word, and kept thy covenant”** Deuteronomy 33:9.

It will be the same for the Christian who seeks to be worthy of the Lord Jesus Christ.

**“He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me”** Matthew 10:37-38.

**“If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you”** John 15:19.

**“Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution”** 2 Timothy 3:12.

*Eliam Rewarded, and Ascended* **“to the spirits of just men made perfect”** Hebrews 12:23

On earth, Eliam lost his first grandson but God gave him four more, each one no doubt as with Naomi **“a restorer of thy life, and a nourisher of thine old age”** Ruth 4:15 and two in the line of the Lord Jesus Christ, Solomon, Matthew 1:6 and Nathan, Luke 3:31.

**“Now these were the sons of David...born unto him in Jerusalem; Shimea, and Shobab, and Nathan, and Solomon, four, of Bathshua the daughter of Ammiel”** 1 Chronicles 3:5.

Moreover, the foregoing evaluation shows that it could be said of Eliam the royalist and father-in-law to the king what Ahimelech said of **“the king’s son in law”** of his time.

**“Then Ahimelech answered the king, and said, And who is so faithful among all thy servants as David, which is the king’s son in law, and goeth at thy bidding, and is honourable in thine house?”** 1 Samuel 22:14.

Joab was judged by the first part of Proverbs 13:13 **“Whoso despiseth the word shall be destroyed”** but Eliam was no doubt rewarded according to the second part **“but he that feareth the commandment shall be rewarded.”** Eliam’s faithfulness like David’s expressed in 1 Samuel 22:14 no doubt placed him with **“the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect”** Hebrews 12:23 because he would have ascended with the Lord Jesus Christ Who **“When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive”** Ephesians 4:8<sup>5</sup>.

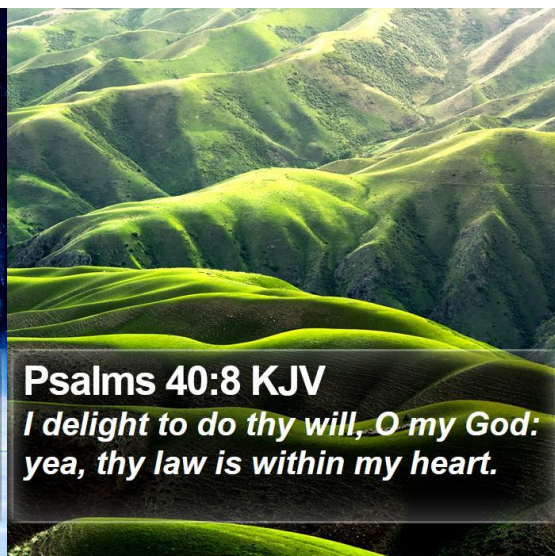
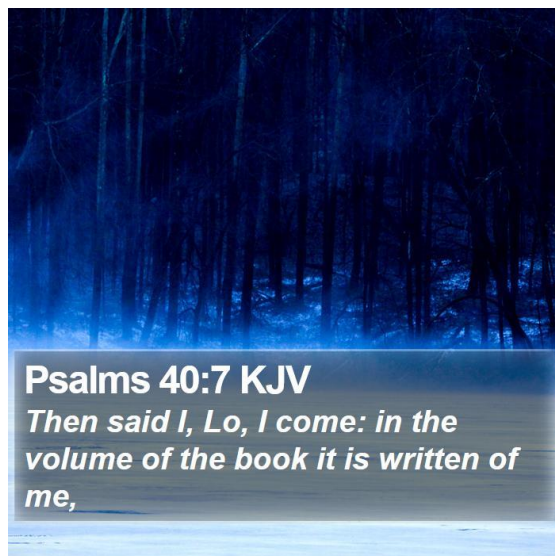
Paul states of Timothy that he was **“faithful in the Lord”** 1 Corinthians 4:17 and that **“ye know the proof of him, that, as a son with the father, he hath served with me in the gospel”** Philippians 2:22.

Timothy with Paul was like Eliam with David with respect to faithfulness. That is how it should be for today's believer with the Lord Jesus Christ.

**"Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations"** Luke 22:28.

Noting too the standards set even by **"your adversary the devil"** 1 Peter 5:8, today's believer should manifest boldness, command of the scripture and dedication to calling as Joab, though a consummate rogue, and in patience in suffering and in fidelity to the king as Eliam, a committed royalist as today's believer should be with respect to **"the King of kings, and Lord of lords"** 1 Timothy 6:15 as King David exhorts:

### **The Role of the Book for Today's Believer**



## ***St George of Lydda***<sup>6</sup>

### **Patron Saint of England – and English Football**<sup>7,8</sup>

*“Then said St George: ‘Fair daughter, doubt ye no thing hereof for I shall help thee in the Name of Jesus Christ.’ She said: ‘For God’s sake, Good Knyghte, go your way, and abide not with me, for ye may not deliver me.’ Thus as they spake together the dragon appeared and came running to them, and St George was upon his horse, and drew out his sword and garnished him with the sign of the cross, and rode hardily against the dragon which came towards him, and smote him with his spear and hurt him sore and threw him to the ground...”*

*“And St George slew the dragon and smote off his head, and commanded that he should be thrown into the fields and they took four carts with oxen that drew him out of the city.”*



Described by Jacobus de Voragine, Bishop of Genoa in *The Golden Legend*, 1230 AD, the above episode is apparently the basis of the familiar account of St George and the Dragon. Princess Sabra is the young lady mentioned but she appears to be an embellishment and sadly contrary to romantic expectations, St George does not win her hand in marriage in the original narrative - he had more pressing business to hand.

A ruined tower, situated north of St George’s Bay where modern Beirut stands on the southern arm, traditionally marks the scene of the conflict. It took place in approximately 303 AD, when according to historian Pliny, the area was infested with crocodiles.

George may therefore have killed one while on his way to the Eastern Court of Emperor Diocletian, located at Nicomedia<sup>9</sup>, now Izmit, about sixty miles east of Istanbul.

The deed comes as no surprise when we consider George’s background.

## Noble Beginnings

George was born in 270 AD to Christian parents in Lydda, now Lod, located on the Plain of Sharon, Palestine. His father was Anastasius<sup>10</sup>, a distinguished Roman army officer who was appointed Governor of all Palestine at the age of twenty-five, with three thousand armed soldiers at his command. George grew up as a soldier-saint. A contemporary writer said of him<sup>11</sup>:

*“When St George had completed his twentieth year he was so exceedingly strong and valiant that he was the leader in battle and there was no one among all the company of soldiers who could be compared with him for strength and beauty. And the grace of God was with him, and He gave him beauty and strength that all those who saw him marvelled at his power and youth...and God was with him in all his ways.”*

George was at that time a general in the Roman Army, in command of five thousand men. None other than Emperor Diocletian himself had conferred this honour on the young man, so greatly impressed was he by George's bravery and leadership.

## Imperial Treachery

But Diocletian was susceptible to less honourable influences. His subordinate and Emperor of the East, Galerius Maximus was a confirmed pagan and in 303 AD persuaded his superior to issue an Edict calling for the extermination of Christianity throughout the Empire. The persecution that followed was savage. Ten thousand Christians are said to have been massacred in Caerleon-on-Usk<sup>12</sup> alone, the organised centre of the British Church and thirty-eight thousand in the eastern half of the Empire<sup>13</sup>. Possibly as many perished in the western half, including those in Britain<sup>14</sup>.

On learning of the Edict, George threw in his lot with the intended victims<sup>15</sup>. He divested himself of his rank and worldly possessions\* and journeyed to Nicomedia to intercede with Diocletian on behalf of his suffering brethren, to plead for their lives and obtain for them freedom of worship. He sought for this purpose to utilise his friendship with Diocletian gained on the field of battle but for others only, not for himself.

\*Save for his personal arms, with which it appears he slew the crocodile.

Yet George knew that despite Diocletian's former regard for him, his mission could end in death. He said to friends before setting out for Nicomedia, *“If ye are alive and hear that I am dead, do me the kindness, for Christ's sake, to take my body to my native city and bury it.”*

These wishes would be faithfully carried out.



## A Bold Witness

By the time George reached Nicomedia, its bishop, Anthimus had been executed and many believers had been terrified into silence by the sight of instruments of torture publicly displayed but when George saw a copy of the decree posted up for public inspection, while both emperors were in the city, he was *stimulated by a divine zeal, and excited by an ardent faith...tore it to shreds as a most profane and wicked act*<sup>16</sup>.

The contemporary historian Eusebius states that, *St George was the first of those at that time who thus distinguished himself, and...in his endurance of such results as naturally followed a daring act of this kind, he maintained an untroubled and undisturbed demeanour to his very last breath.*

His ardour was unabated when he stood before Galerius and his sixty-nine governors<sup>17</sup>.

He boldly declared, *"I am a Christian, and I believe on my Lord Jesus Christ; whatsoever ye desire to do unto me, that do"* and St Ambrose, Bishop of Milan, 374-397 AD, states, *"George, the most faithful soldier of Jesus Christ, when religion was by others concealed, alone adventured to confess the name of God, Whose heavenly grace infused such constancy into him that he not only scorned the tyrants, but contemned their torments."*

Galerius and his governors sentenced George to death and Diocletian, sadly, acquiesced in the verdict. After a period of imprisonment and torture in an effort to force him to recant, the martyr was beheaded on April 23<sup>rd</sup>, 304 AD.

When he came to the spot where he would be executed, he asked leave of his guards to pray for his persecutors. Ever the soldier, he then turned to them said, *"Come with me, brethren, and fulfil your order and do what ye have to do."*

The date has of course gone down in history as St George's Day<sup>18</sup>.

## Association with England

According to Historic UK<sup>19</sup> *King Edward III made him the Patron Saint of England when he formed the Order of the Garter in St. George's name in 1350, and the cult of the Saint was further advanced by King Henry V, at the battle of Agincourt in northern France*<sup>20</sup>.

The Royal Society of St George<sup>21</sup> states that George was officially beatified by the Roman Catholic Church but the term 'Saint' George may well have been coincident with the widespread mourning that followed his death, which has been further commemorated by the propagation far and wide of St George's 'device' or knightly emblem, the familiar red cross on a white background. It probably signified George's regard for the blood sacrifice at Calvary of the Lord Jesus Christ and the sinless purity of the Saviour's life on

earth. England's adoption of St George's emblem as its national emblem may therefore indeed pre-date St George, and derive from the arrival of the earliest Christians to these shores during the first century AD, including Joseph of Arimathea. The striking and simple symbolism of the St George Cross could well have appealed to many early believers.

England's association with St George is much more direct, however. He visited York<sup>22</sup> during his military service and was welcomed by the Christian Empress Helena, mother of George's comrade-in-arms\*, Constantine, who later became Emperor. St George's visit is commemorated by the shield emblazoned with his emblem that hangs over the gate of York – one of many instances where the soldier-martyr's ensign figures in English heraldry, pomp and circumstance – though none more widely celebrated than on present-day football terraces! \*In an individual sense, possibly<sup>23</sup>

But there is a greater cause.

### **Not in Vain**

Like his Saviour, George achieved much in his death. By it, he slew a monster more dangerous than any saurian; the dragon of persecution. Diocletian abdicated in 305 A.D. and Imperial Rome's large-scale persecution of Christians ended<sup>24</sup>.

It wasn't the end of persecution *per se* but in coming ages, God would raise up other men to stand, both against tyranny and for the witness of the Lord Jesus Christ, after the manner of St George<sup>25</sup>:

*"I see you stand like greyhounds in the slips,  
"Straining upon the start. The game's afoot:  
"Follow your spirit; and, upon this charge  
"Cry God for Harry, England and St George!"*

From *Henry V*, Act 3, Scene 1

Or in the words of St Paul, 1 Corinthians 16:13:

***"Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong"***

### **An Exhortation**

God is still looking for men – and women - of stature who will stand and strive for the Lord Jesus Christ in these days of rapidly encroaching heathenism, as even God's enemy Pharaoh of Egypt recognized only too well, Exodus 10:11:

***"Go now ye that are men, and serve the LORD; for that ye did desire"***

Will you be among them?<sup>26</sup>



## King's Man Sir Renaud de Carteret III

### Introduction

Two life verses for a King's man, one for the Lord's Return and one for the Lord's reward for faithfulness as in Luke 22:28 "**Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations**" are these:

**"For the LORD is our judge, the LORD is our lawgiver, the LORD is our king; he will save us"** Isaiah 33:22.

**"For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise"** Hebrews 10:36.

Both verses impinge upon an account from the Channel Island of Jersey. This writer heard the following account many years ago at *The Jersey Experience* exhibition<sup>27</sup>, now sadly closed.

The Channel Islands are all that remain of the old Duchy of Normandy and therefore came under the English Crown following the Norman Conquest of 1066. The islanders therefore refer to the reigning monarch, whether a king or queen, as "*Our Duke*."

The Channel islanders were faced with a crucial decision early in the 13<sup>th</sup> century when England and France were at war. Should they remain loyal to the English Crown or side with France? The second option was a serious temptation because the Channel Islands, especially Jersey, are very close to France. The French Cotentin Peninsula is clearly visible from Jersey's north and east coasts on a clear day and if the islanders took the first option, to remain loyal to the English Crown, it would immediately put them at the sharp end against the enemy.

Fast forward briefly to the present day and the dispute between Jersey and France over fishing rights<sup>28</sup>. The report makes these salient points.

*Jersey's status is complicated because it is not part of the UK, and it was never part of the European Union. It is what's known as a Crown dependency, which means it has substantial freedom from Westminster, and exercises day-to-day control over its fishing waters. However, the UK government is ultimately responsible for its international relationships. That's why access to fishing waters around the Channel Islands are dealt with specifically in the new UK-EU trade agreement.*

Jersey's Crown-dependent status arises from the events of 900 years ago when the island was faced with the decision of remaining loyal to the English Crown or siding with France. The nobles of the Channel Islands convened a meeting

to consider the options and after much debate, the leading nobleman, Jerseyman Sir Renaud de Carteret, rose to his feet and proposed a toast:

*“To the Duke, our King”*

Sir Renaud pledged loyalty to the English Crown even though he knew that it would cost him his considerable holdings in Normandy, which it did. The English king at the time was the tyrannical John. However Sir Renaud and the other nobles followed 1 Peter 2:17 **“Fear God. Honour the king.”** The Lord dealt separately with John. See the attached study **Archbishop Stephen Langton – Charter Framer and Chapter Divider.**

All the other noblemen rose to the toast and the Channel Islands have remained loyal to the Crown ever since then, arguably mainland Britain’s most long-standing ally. Sir Renaud and his fellow nobles proved to be King’s men. Today’s believer can be encouraged by their example, as will be shown.

From the Crown’s perspective, the Channel Islands well deserve by their example the endorsement that today’s believer as a King’s man should merit from **“the LORD...our king”** Isaiah 33:22 at His Return, insofar as **“If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you”** John 15:18 and **“For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin”** Hebrews 4:15.

For a King’s man therefore **“Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations”** Luke 22:28. Sir Renaud de Carteret III in particular exemplified such a King’s man as these excerpts show.

### Sir Renaud de Carteret III<sup>29</sup>

*Sir Renaud de Carteret III, Seigneur of Carteret (1140–1214) was the son of Renaud de Carteret II, and father of Philippe and Godefroy.*

*With the separation of Normandy from England, (1204), Renaud de Carteret had to choose (with many others) between his possessions in Jersey and those in continental Normandy. Although he had far greater lands on the continent, of which the town of Carteret still bears the name, he chose to throw in his lot with Jersey and remain faithful to the Duke of Normandy in the person of John of England. Had he decided otherwise, there can be no doubt that the history of Jersey would have been a different one.*

*It would probably have been won over by the king of France and placed on the same footing as the Chausey Islands, dependencies of France not differing from the mainland in government or speech. Loyal Devoir means Loyal Duty<sup>30</sup>.*

The cost to Sir Renaud for his stance was not inconsiderable<sup>31</sup>, this writer's emphases:

*Renaud de Carteret...is named for collector of the aid levied in the fifth year of King John upon the lords of the fiefs in the islands, and when in his ninth year the same king demands hostages for their fealty from the chief men of the islands, Renaud gave up Philip, his son and heir, who was thereupon committed to the custody of his uncle Richard, who was on the mainland, and being or having been constable of the king's castle of Winchester was known to be well affected. In 1208 Renaud had a letter of protection, and in 1213 Philip the hostage was given up to Philip Daubenev, the governor of the islands. Thus far we may trace the history of this Renaud from the extracts now in print from the Close Rolls and Patent Rolls of King John. **We may add that when the king loses***



de Carteret Family Crest



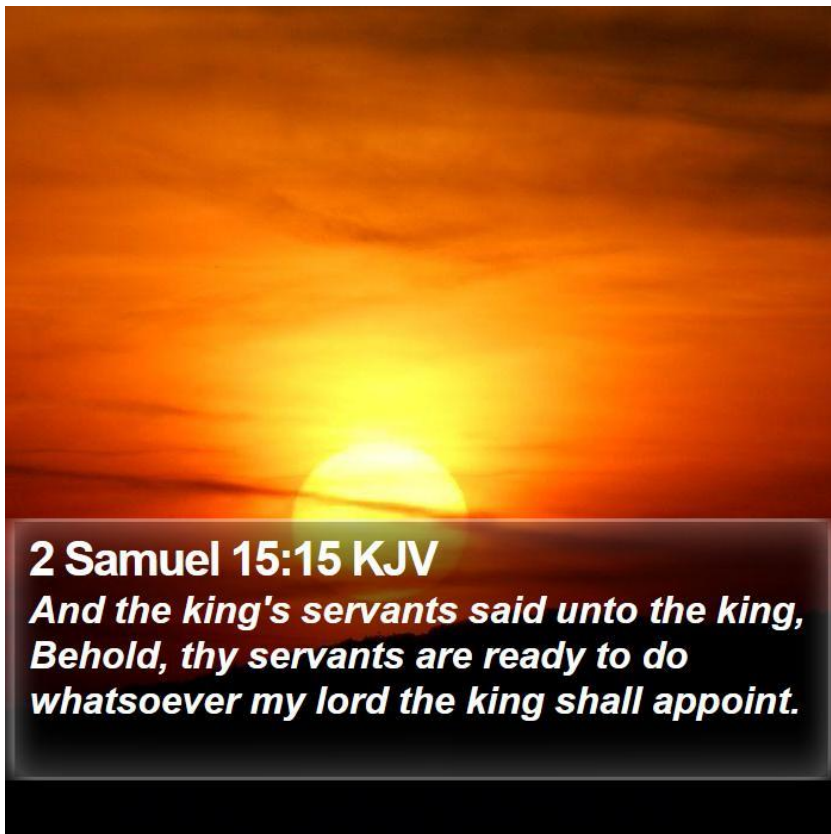
*Normandy, Renaud de Carteret loses Carteret and his other lordships in the duchy, but Carteret is now firmly established as the family surname.*

Note the promise of the Lord Jesus Christ, sobering but uplifting, with respect to possessions lost, including houses and lands such as Sir Renaud lost, to anyone with *His family surname* **“that worthy name by which ye are called”** James 2:7.

***“And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel’s, But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life”*** Mark 10:29-30.

### **Conclusion**

Even in a time of adversity the King’s man, like Sir Renaud de Carteret III, doesn’t waver<sup>32</sup>.





## Archbishop Stephen Langton - Charter Framer and Chapter Divider

The Christian Institute<sup>33</sup> has compiled a most informative synopsis of Magna Carta<sup>34</sup>. June 15<sup>th</sup> 2015 was the 800<sup>th</sup> Anniversary of Magna Carta. We should note that Archbishop Stephen Langton circa 1150-1228<sup>35</sup> was not only the prime mover in framing Magna Carta but God used him to create the chapter divisions in the scripture that we have today. As ***“a chosen vessel unto me”*** Acts 9:15 Bro. Langton did a good job before *two* kings, as Charter Framer before an earthly king and Chapter Divider before ***“the King of kings and Lord of Lords”*** 1 Timothy 6:15 thereby meriting King Solomon’s commendation *and bar*<sup>36</sup>. See below. Note that the man may be a tyrant – no later English or British king has been named or taken the name John for the purpose of reigning – but still not a mean man, rather one with great power, even if like John he misuses it.



Stephen Langton  
Archbishop of Canterbury  
1207-1228

***“Seest thou a man diligent in his business? he shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men”*** Proverbs 22:29. Today’s believer should aim for the *same* diligence, as Paul exhorts. ***“For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister. And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence to the full assurance of hope unto the end”*** Hebrews 6:10-11.

### A Secular Evaluation

One secular but fairly well-balanced source<sup>37</sup> has this to say about Bro. Langton.

*Who Divided the Bible into Chapters?* by Fred Sanders, July 9<sup>th</sup> 2009

*At some point late in [Langton’s] teaching career (the date usually given is 1205)...Langton had the great, simple idea of breaking the text of the Latin translation of the Bible into manageable sections about the size of long*

paragraphs... Langton broke the uniform text of Scripture into a series of chapters. He did this for the entire Vulgate, and his system of chapter division was immediately recognized as a great help for Bible study.

Bro. Langton completed the work of chapter divisions in 1227<sup>38</sup>, not long before his home call. He could testify with the Lord Jesus Christ as every believer should aim to **“I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do”** John 17:4. Fred Sanders continues.

*Chapter-division was apparently the right idea at the right time, and one of the remarkable things about the Langtonian chapter divisions is how they were adopted and propagated by different scholarly communities. Jewish scholars (who had worked with other methods of division previously) soon began observing Langtonian chapter divisions, and the churches of the Christian East took the same divisions over in their biblical studies... Since Langton established the chapter system at the very beginning of the thirteenth century, his influence also spread into all the vernacular translations of the Bible that began appearing in the next centuries. In fact, the chapter system became increasingly important with the proliferation of translations, enabling scholars to move quickly and precisely between versions. And with the advent of printing, Langton’s chapters became still more important...*

As Mordecai wisely said to Queen Esther ***“and who knoweth whether thou art come to the kingdom for such a time as this?”*** Esther 4:14.

### **A System Superior to the Critics**

While voicing some criticism of Bro. Langton’s system, stemming for example from Bible rejecters like Dr A. T. Robertson, Fred Sanders nevertheless states the following.

*The vast majority of Langton’s chapter breaks are more organic than artificial; they are not arbitrary, but are based on good insight into the flow of the text. Above all, they are handy and universally used. Even if we were to make a list of 250 places\* where the Langtonian chapters could be improved by better break points, it would be madness to try to impose a new, improved re-chaptering of Scripture on a global community of Bible readers who have used a standardized system for centuries. \*from 1189 for the total number of chapters in the Old and New Testaments*

Fred Sanders concludes *leave the old system in place.*

Likewise, the Lord’s invitation remains, even if too often turned down. ***“Thus saith the LORD, Stand ye in the ways, and see, and ask for the old paths, where is the good way, and walk therein, and ye shall find rest for your souls...”*** Jeremiah 6:16.

## Facing Down the Tyrant

Fred Sanders says this about Bro. Langton, Magna Carta and facing down the tyrant John.

*Langton has an important place in the history of political thought, as he was involved in negotiating the famous dispute between the despotic King John...and his aggrieved noblemen. The deal they finally brokered, securing the rights of the noblemen and limiting the powers of the King, was sealed by the drafting and signing of the Magna Carta. Between this and his biography of Richard the Lion-Hearted, Langton was not popular with King John, and even found himself under a ban from Pope Innocent III\* for several years. But his office and reputation were restored late in his life. \***“that man of sin”** 2 Thessalonians 2:3<sup>39</sup>*



Key to facing down the tyrant John was Bro. Langton's vision for the English Church though it would take centuries to fulfill it. The Christian Institute states **[Magna Carta's] first and last clauses guarantee the freedom of the English church.** The first one states, "we have granted to God, and by this present Charter have confirmed for us and our heirs in perpetuity, that the English Church shall be free, and shall have its rights undiminished, and its liberties unimpaired." Amen.

## Finishing the Course

In sum, though part of the Roman Church, as most folk were back then Bro. Langton could testify along with Paul and as all true believers would hope to do **"I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing"** 2 Timothy 4:7-8.

## Voice From The Ranks – A Testimony of the Crimea

by Sergeant-Major Timothy Gowing, 7<sup>th</sup> Foot, Royal Fusiliers

*“For thou hast girded me with strength unto the battle:  
thou hast subdued under me those that rose up against me”* Psalm 18:39



### The Battle of the Alma, 20 September 1854

The 7<sup>th</sup> of Foot Royal Fusiliers and the Coldstream Guards attack Russian-held heights at the Battle of the Alma during the Crimean War (1854-1856)<sup>40</sup>

***Voice From The Ranks and Faith Forged in “the fiery trial”*** 1 Peter 4:12

The book *Voice From The Ranks: a personal account of the Crimean Campaign*<sup>41</sup> by Sergeant-Major Timothy Gowing is an infantryman’s eye-view of the Crimean War. The book is also a testimony of a young man coming to know the Lord Jesus Christ under the *“the fiery trial”* 1 Peter 4:12 of the Crimea.

### ***Godly Parents and a Call to Arms***

Timothy Gowing was born in 1834, the eldest son of John Gowing a Baptist minister. He grew up in Suffolk and Norfolk and joined the Royal Fusiliers in January 1854, at the age of nineteen. The Royal Fusiliers formed part of the elite Light Division. Gowing’s book *Voice From The Ranks* was republished by The Folio Society of London in 1954 on the centenary of the Crimean War. There were still people alive then who remembered Gowing vividly, as a man of striking appearance and personality, about six feet tall and of outstanding strength but also *an extremely religious man [who] rarely drank anything*

*stronger than tea or coffee.* In that way God did enable Timothy Gowing to experience in ***“the day of battle”*** Zechariah 14:3 of the Crimea Psalm 18:39 ***“For thou hast girded me with strength unto the battle: thou hast subdued under me those that rose up against me.”***

### ***Enduring Hardness***

The Preface to *Voice From The Ranks* outlines the author’s experiences in the Crimea.

*I took part in some of the most desperate scenes in the Crimea - at the Alma I was one of those who led the way up the fatal Heights; at Inkerman I was in the thick of the fight and was wounded. I was beside that Christian hero Captain Hedley Vicars when he fell in his country’s cause...I was also engaged in those memorable struggles that were carried on night after night, and day after day, before Sevastopol, and was wounded a second time in that bloody attack on the Redan...*

*The letters to my parents from the seat of war in the Crimea I have ventured to publish, trusting they will prove of more than passing interest and set more than one thinking, ‘Where is my boy tonight?’ Many of them were written under great difficulty in a bleak tent or hut with the thermometer far below freezing point, with my wet rags frozen on my back; often my overcoat stiff with frost.*

Sergeant Gowing’s Crimean experiences thereby cast him as a tough-minded role model for today’s believer. **“Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ”** 2 Timothy 2:3.

### ***Devoted Son***

The Sergeant’s letters to his parents invariably spoke of his very deep affection for them, a testimony to his Christian home upbringing. His letter from *Camp before Sevastopol, June 28<sup>th</sup> 1855* is typical.

*I will write as often as I can...Although I wear a red coat, I hope there is a warm heart beating beneath it. I must conclude with love to all, and a double allowance for poor mother. Believe me ever, dear Parents, Your affectionate son, T. Gowing, Sergeant, Royal Fusiliers.*

As Solomon said, which words like Sergeant Gowing, today’s believer should remember **“Hearken unto thy father that begat thee, and despise not thy mother when she is old”** Proverbs 23:22.

### ***The River Alma and a Faithful Witness***

The first major battle of the Crimean War was the crossing of the River Alma on September 20<sup>th</sup> 1854. Sergeant Gowing's closest friend at that time was a Christian soldier who doubtless influenced Gowing's later conversion. Their last conversation took place the night before the battle.

*Getting hold of my arm, he stopped, looked me full in the face, and twice repeated the solemn words: 'Eternity, Eternity, know and seek the Lord while He may be found. Call upon Him while He is near, for you cannot tell what tomorrow will bring forth, and it may be too late then.'*

The soldier was right, as Paul shows. ***"(For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.)"*** 2 Corinthians 6:2.

The Light Division crossed the Alma under heavy fire. Gowing recalled:

*Presently [the enemy] began to pitch their shot and shell right amongst us, and our men began to fall. I know that I felt horribly sick-a cold shivering running through my veins...Up to the river we rushed and got ready for a swim, pulling off knapsacks and camp kettles. A number of our poor fellows were...shot down with grape and canister - which came amongst us like hail - while attempting to cross...Into the river we dashed, nearly up to our armpits, with our ammunition and rifles on top of our heads to keep them dry, scrambled out the best way we could...and commenced to ascend the hill. From east to west the enemy's batteries were served with great rapidity...the guns; the thunderbolts of war were...not far apart - and death loves a crowd...[I]n all, some 42 guns were raining death and destruction upon us... A number of our fellows on reaching the top of the slippery bank were shot down and fell back dead, or were drowned in the Alma.*

The Light Division gained the heights above the Alma but suffered severely. The Royal Fusiliers sustained over 50% casualties, among them Sergeant Gowing's Christian friend. Gowing recalled:

*I found him close to the river, dead...He was now in the presence of his glorified Captain; he was as brave as a lion, but a faithful disciple...I sat down beside him and thought my heart would break as I recalled some of his sayings, particularly his talk to me at midnight of the 19<sup>th</sup>.*

Sergeant Gowing's friend died a faithful witness. Today's believer should aim for the same testimony.

***"I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith; Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord,***

*the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing” 2 Timothy 4:7-8.*

### ***Siege, Deprivation, Disease and the Soldiers’ Battle of Inkerman***

The Allies besieged the town of Sevastopol after the Alma. The siege was grim, as Gowing recalled:

*We found it no child’s play dragging heavy siege guns up from Balaklava...up to our ankles in mud which stuck like glue. Often on arrival in camp we found but little to eat...then off again to help get the guns and mortars into their respective batteries, exposed all the time to the enemy’s fire...*

*Our numbers began to get very scanty - cholera was daily finding its victims. It never left us from the time we were in Turkey...Nearly all of us were suffering more or less from ague, fever or colds, but it was no use complaining - the doctors had little or no medicine to give. Our fellows were dropping off fast with dysentery and diarrhoea; but, all that could stuck to it manfully.*

Today’s believer should stick to it manfully according to his commission from the Lord as Paul exhorts. **“Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it”** Colossians 4:17.

On the 25<sup>th</sup> October 1854, Gowing witnessed the ill-fated ‘Charge of the Light Brigade’ from the heights above Balaklava but the infantry bore the brunt of the fighting. Gowing described what came to be known as ‘the soldiers’ battle’ of Inkerman, fought on November 5<sup>th</sup> 1854.

*Inkerman will not admit of much description, particularly from one who was in the thick of it...for the fog was so dense that one could not see, at times, twenty yards. On came the Russian columns; but they had to go back time after time much quicker than they came. The bayonet was used with terrible effect by all regiments. The enemy...were met by British cold steel and were hurled...from the field.*

Today’s believer should be able to wield **“the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God”** Ephesians 6:17 against the enemy with like terrible effect **“For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart”** Hebrews 4:12.

### ***A Soldier and a Gentleman***

Sergeant Gowing was bayoneted in each thigh at Inkerman and ‘cas-evaced’ by sea to Malta, where he wrote to his parents. His letter indicates that the renowned Miss Nightingale’s reforms had taken effect. *I have the best of attention and, what’s more, a pretty young lady for my nurse. You know, father, that soldiers have an eye to pretty girls [no change there in ~170 years ☺]; but*



*woe be to the man who would attempt to molest one of these dear creatures, for they are worth their weight in gold...*

That is:

**“...intreat...The elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all purity”** 1 Timothy 5:1-2.

### ***Another Faithful Witness and Undoubted Influence***

Gowing returned to the front early in 1855 and met Captain Hedley Vicars of the 97<sup>th</sup> Regiment.

*Gowing wrote That night I met for the first time that noble-minded man, Captain Hedley Vicars. He and I had a long chat in the trench...I told him about my comrade at the Alma. ‘Well Sergeant,’ he said, ‘the Lord’s time is the right time; who is the best off now, you or he?’...*

*He invited me...to his tent for prayer, as he told me a few who loved the Lord met there as often as they could. I did not profess anything at the time, but was going against light and knowledge\*. I went once and only once before he was killed. He was a Christian, and was not ashamed of his Master, but yet a most determined soldier for his country. \*light and knowledge are in Jesus Christ 2 Corinthians 4:6 **“For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.”** Captain Vicars was killed on March 22<sup>nd</sup> 1855. His testimony remains. **“According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldness, as always, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death”** Philippians 1:20.*

### ***Sevastopol, First Assault, June 18<sup>th</sup> 1855***

The first attempt to capture Sevastopol was a disaster. Gowing, however, recalled the men’s resolve. *It did not last much more than half an hour, and our loss (killed, wounded, and missing) was 7,988 French and British. Our men had been crushed beneath a terrific fire, but not subdued...Although they had just thrashed us, we were not going to give up the game for one black eye.*

The men had the spirit of David, which is most applicable for today’s believer. **“In the day when I cried thou answeredst me, and strengthenedst me with strength in my soul”** Psalm 138:3.

### ***Sevastopol, Second Assault, September 8<sup>th</sup> 1855***

The second and final assault went in on September 8<sup>th</sup> 1855. The British objective was the Redan, one of the city’s main forts. Gowing was saved by this time and it appears so were other soldiers. He wrote: *I know I tried to pray, begged the Lord to forgive my sins for His great name’s sake, and asked for*

*His protecting arm around me, and strength of mind and body to do my duty to my Queen and Country...*

*On the night of the 7<sup>th</sup> September [the soldiers] assembled in hundreds in front of their lines and committed themselves into the hands of an all-wise God in prayer and praise, while others burst forth into the National Anthem. Such were the men who stormed Sevastopol.*

They trusted God's promise as today's believer should. **"Whoso offereth praise glorifieth me; and to him that ordereth his conversation aright will I shew the salvation of God"** Psalm 50:23.

Sergeant Gowing was among those who reached the Redan, where he received five separate wounds but sent a letter to his parents on 14<sup>th</sup> September 1855 expressing his thankfulness to God.

*The fighting, dear Parents, in the interior of the Redan was desperate...I cannot express my gratitude to the King of Kings and Lord of Lords, who shielded my life-I hope for some good purpose... Gowing's sense of being saved to serve is also evident in a letter to his parents dated March 1856, at the war's end.*

*Truly I have had a merciful God watching over me and am spared, I hope, for some good purpose, for this wonderful God of ours can see from the beginning to the end; He is the same unchanging God that the Patriarchs trusted in.*

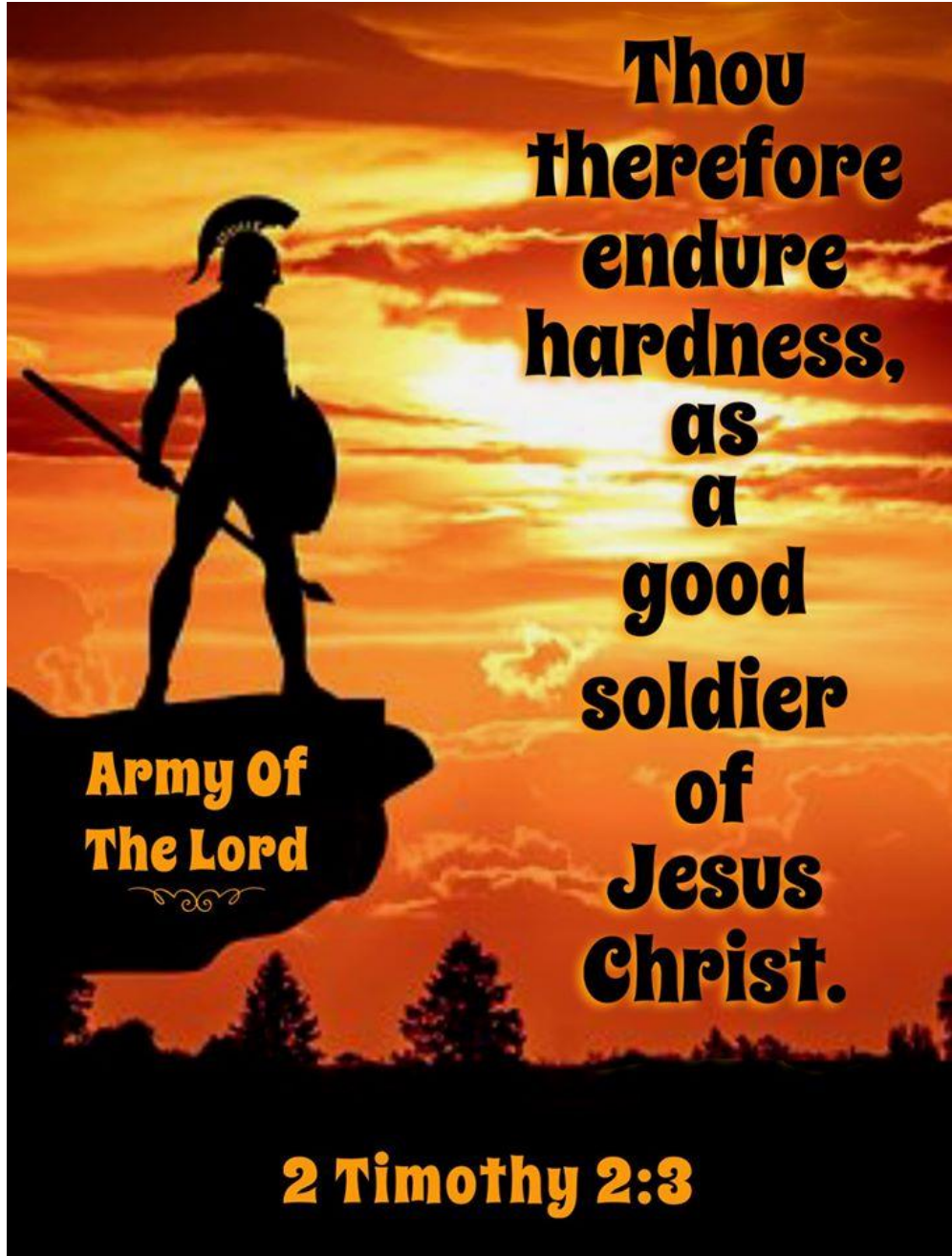
God's good purpose for Timothy Gowing was as He promised His disciples. **"But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth"** Acts 1:8.

### ***Some Good Purpose Fulfilled and a Tough-minded Role Model***

Timothy Gowing remained in the army after the Crimea and served for a total of 22 years, 18 of them in India. He was promoted to Colour Sergeant, then Sergeant Major and twice offered a commission, which he declined partly for family reasons. Although his military career flourished, Gowing's personal life was dogged by tragedy. He was widowed twice and of his 19 children by his first two wives, 18 predeceased him, seven dying in one day from cholera, in India. Nevertheless, he kept the faith and after leaving the army sold many copies of his book *Voice From The Ranks* to the workers in the offices and factories of Lancashire where he settled. Gowing's testimony and those of his comrade who died at the Alma and Captain Vicars no doubt continued to challenge the hearts and minds of ordinary folk. In that way Timothy Gowing fulfilled God's purpose for him as among **"witnesses unto me"** Acts 1:8.

Sergeant Major Gowing's home call came on February 3<sup>rd</sup> 1908. The old soldier passed away aged 73, survived by his third wife, Elizabeth and a son from

his second marriage. As indicated, see *Enduring Hardness*, Sergeant Major Gowing was indeed a tough-minded role model for today's believer as Paul exhorts<sup>42</sup>.



## ***STAND FIRM, YE BOYS FROM MAINE***

Testimony of Brigadier General Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain

***“Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong”***

1 Corinthians 16:13



### ***Introduction***

A fascinating leader to emerge from the Ken Burns series *The Civil War*<sup>43</sup> was Brigadier General Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain<sup>44</sup> 1828-1914, an academic and theologian from Bowdoin College, Maine. Aged 34, he was appointed to command the 20<sup>th</sup> Maine Volunteer Infantry in 1862 and served with distinction at Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, Petersburg and Five Forks. General Ulysses S. Grant<sup>45</sup>, commander of the Union armies, selected Chamberlain to receive the surrender of the Southern army at Appomattox Court House on April 12<sup>th</sup> 1865.

Here Chamberlain made the unforgettable and honourable gesture of a parade ground salute to the defeated enemy, returned by General John B. Gordon, the Confederate commander, who remembered Chamberlain as *“one of the knightliest soldiers of the Federal Army.”* Chamberlain was awarded the Medal of Honour in 1893 for service at

Gettysburg. He was diligent and thereby served his nation loyally, as Christian men should.

***“Seest thou a man diligent in his business? he shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men”*** Proverbs 22:29.

Chamberlain’s biography *In the Hands of Providence* by Alice Rains Trulock<sup>46</sup> focuses on his war service and subsequent career but Trulock reveals that Chamberlain was a committed Christian with a resilient faith that sustained him through the worst of the Civil War. Chamberlain’s life and testimony show that God’s promise to Isaiah still holds good today.

***“When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee”*** Isaiah 43:2.

### ***Stand firm, ye boys from Maine***

Chamberlain led the vital and victorious defence of the Round Tops at Gettysburg on July 2<sup>nd</sup> 1863. The battle raged throughout the glaring heat of the July afternoon *with exhaustion and terrible losses...taking a great toll on both sides*<sup>47</sup>. One of the 20<sup>th</sup> Maine’s men, Private later Rev. Theodore Gerrish<sup>48</sup>, later testified of the conflict *...not once in a century are men permitted to bear such responsibilities for freedom and justice, for God and humanity, as are now placed upon you...Stand firm, ye boys from Maine*. See graphic. That was really Chamberlain’s testimony and the Christian has a like exhortation. ***“Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong”*** 1 Corinthians 16:13.

### ***“Safety is of the LORD”***

Chamberlain, disdainful of personal danger, stood conspicuously on top of a large boulder so that he could oversee the action. Trulock writes *A Confederate from the Fifteenth Alabama...drew bead on Chamberlain...but something - a strange feeling - caused him to stop. Puzzled and impatient with himself, he tried again to squeeze the trigger but could not. Finally, he gave it up, and this perilous moment in Chamberlain’s life passed, all unknown to him*. As Solomon observed ***“The horse is prepared against the day of battle: but safety is of the LORD”*** Proverbs 21:31. That is an encouragement for today’s believer.

***Jesus Christ is my all-sufficient Savio[u]r. I go to him***

Chamberlain was severely wounded in the battle of Petersburg, Virginia, June 18<sup>th</sup> 1864<sup>49</sup>. He was taken to the division hospital, already choked with wounded. A private of the 143<sup>rd</sup> Pennsylvania lay on an operating table awaiting amputation of his leg. *He heard Chamberlain ask to be laid to one side, saying that he was all right and they should take care of his boys.* Instead, the surgeons gave priority to Chamberlain but they thought he would not survive. The bullet *had torn through his whole body from right thigh to left hip, severing blood vessels, nicking the urethra and bladder, and crushing bone before it stopped.* Nevertheless, the surgeons worked on Chamberlain all night, though stopping at one point because of his terrible pain. He urged them to continue but in the cold light of dawn, believing death was near, he pencilled a short note to his wife and children:

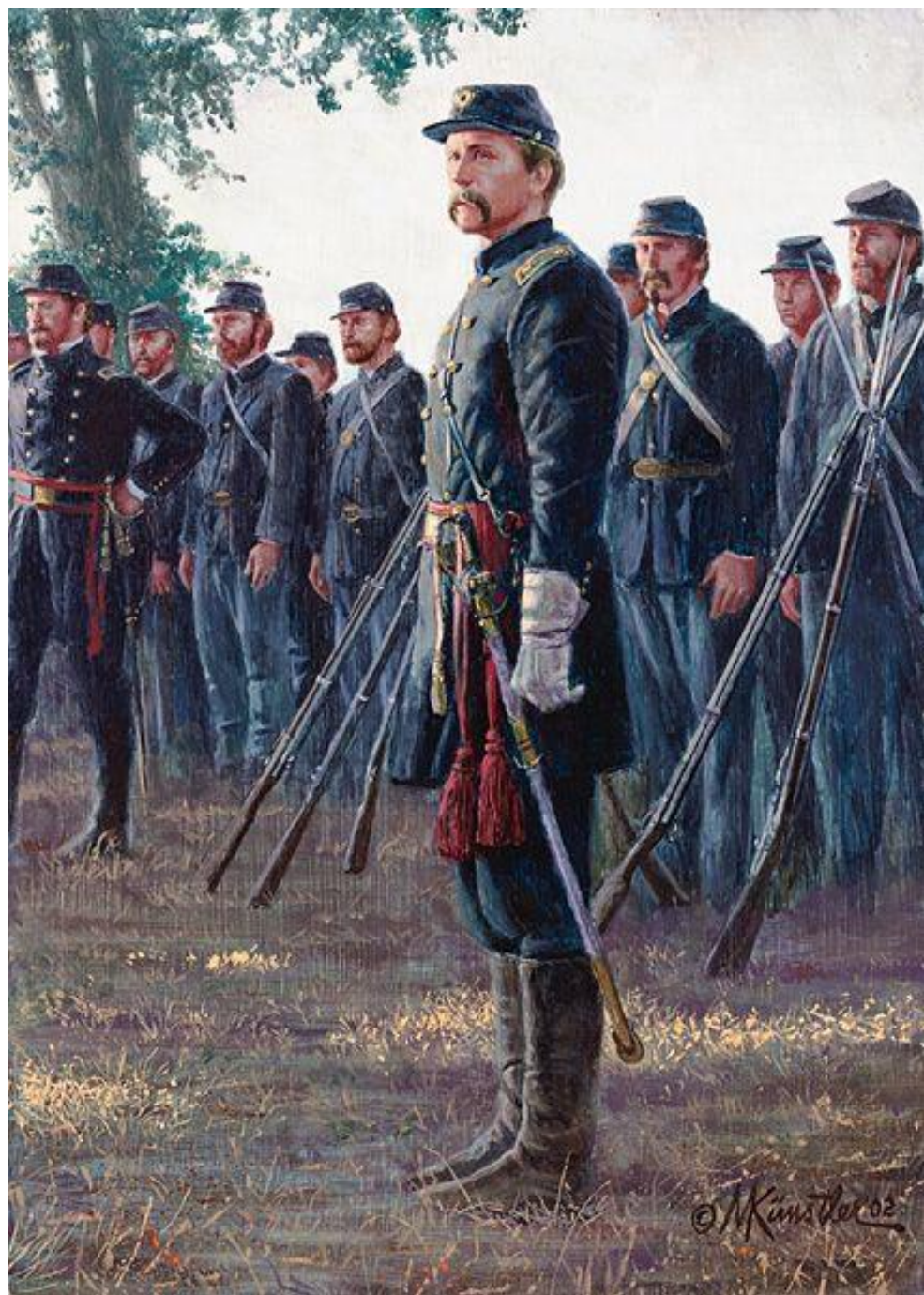
*My darling wife I am lying mortally wounded the doctors think but my mind & heart are at peace Jesus Christ is my all-sufficient savior. I go to him. God bless & keep & comfort you, precious one, you have been a precious wife to me. To know & love you makes life & death beautiful. Cherish the darlings & give my love to all the dear ones. Do not grieve too much for me. We shall all soon meet Live for the children Give my dearest love to Father, mother & Sally and John Oh how happy to feel yourself forgiven God bless you evermore precious, precious one Ever yours Lawrence.* It was not, however, ***“the day of death”*** Ecclesiastes 8:8 for Chamberlain. That is God’s decision, as every believer should note.

*Jesus Christ is my all-sufficient savior is nevertheless the essential testimony for every individual, as Peter declared. ***“Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved”*** Acts 4:12.*

***“I have finished my course”***

After the war, Chamberlain pursued a long and distinguished career in public life and was elected State Governor for Maine four times. Though still plagued by his wound, he lived to the age of 85. His final testimony was as Paul’s and as the Christian’s should be. ***“I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith”*** 2 Timothy 4:7.





**Brigadier General Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain  
and the 20<sup>th</sup> Maine<sup>50</sup>**



## Mother

### *Mercy Manifold*

Romans 12:8 exhorts for *“he that sheweth mercy”* to do so *“with cheerfulness.”* Mary Ann Bickerdyke 1817-1901 from Galesburg Illinois showed mercy manifold *“with cheerfulness”* as a nurse and hospital administrator for the Union Army during the American Civil War<sup>51</sup>. The title of her biography *Cyclone in Calico* comes from an irate doctor who complained to his commandant about Mrs Bickerdyke’s visit to his hospital. Alluding to Mrs Bickerdyke’s garb *he shouted to the astonished commandant that a “cyclone in calico” had invaded his hospital and turned it upside down.* Mrs Bickerdyke spoke with the commandant soon afterwards and thereby made herself indispensable to the army for the duration of the war. *The interview that followed is not recorded, but in after years Mrs. Bickerdyke said simply, “I talked sense to him.”* The irate doctor gave no more trouble.



Mary Ann Bickerdyke in 1898

It had all started when Mrs Bickerdyke’s pastor asked her in the summer of 1861 to care for sick soldiers in camp at Cairo, Illinois. The camp was overcrowded and unsanitary. Many men were ill and some had died. Mrs Bickerdyke visited the tented hospitals there, all of which were filthy. She arranged for the sick men to have hot baths, better food, cleaned-up quarters and clean bedding. When she summoned the men to their hot baths and chicken dinners, it was *“with cheerfulness.”*

*...beckoning the doctor [in charge] and two or three volunteers to accompany her, she marched upon the first tent. She waited a minute, while the dull eyes of the sick men turned toward her. Then, unexpectedly, she laughed.*

*“If your mas could see you now! I bet they ain’t one of you had a bath since you left home. Well, we’re going to clean things up around here, boys. We’re going to clean you up, too. Now how many of you can walk if you try real hard? I got men here to carry you if you can’t. But how many can get up for a hot bath and a clean bed and a real home supper? This ain’t the sergeant getting you up for drill, remember. Come on, now. Who can walk for fried chicken?”*

*A surprisingly large number of them could, and did. Those too weak to totter out on their own feet were carried, and set down near the hogsheds-turned-bathtubs...*

Mrs Bickerdyke knew Proverbs 17:22 ***“A merry heart doeth good like a medicine: but a broken spirit drieth the bones”*** and in mercy how to mend broken spirits along with languishing bodies. The soldiers to whom Mrs Bickerdyke ministered responded with uplifted spirits and great affection. *They called her Mother...Before the summer passed Mrs. Bickerdyke was Mother to every enlisted man in camp, sick or well.* The name stuck and would be used not only by enlisted men.

### ***Mercy as Compassion***

Showing mercy ***“with cheerfulness”*** Romans 12:8 as Mother Bickerdyke did is meant to cheer those ministered to and lift their spirits because ***“A merry heart maketh a cheerful countenance: but by sorrow of the heart the spirit is broken”*** Proverbs 15:13. Luke shows that mercy in Romans 12:8 is therefore compassion manifest as practical care. ***“But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him, And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him...Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves? And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise”*** Luke 10:33-34, 36-37. That was Mother Bickerdyke’s calling and strength.

### ***“Nobody alive left out there”***

Mrs Bickerdyke accompanied the Union Army during its advance into Tennessee where she cared for the many wounded from the days-long battle for Rebel-held Fort Donelson in February 1862. She helped scour the battlefield to bring in every possible survivor. On one occasion in spite of her exhaustion, Mrs Bickerdyke continued her search after dark, with an unexpected result.

*In his tent on the field, a Union officer was sleepless...Colonel John A. Logan...tossed on his cot and cursed his wound...it stung and ached...He got up for a drink of water, and looked out to see how the weather was. The weather was cold, but the sky had cleared, with a waning moon dimly lighting the darkness. While he looked, it seemed to Colonel Logan that he saw another light, close to the ground, and moving a little. It strengthened as his eyes accustomed themselves to the night, and flitted to another spot.*

*The colonel shuddered. Some ghoul, robbing the dead? What else could it be?...Colonel Logan roused his sleeping orderly. "Find that man and bring him to me!" he roared.*

*The orderly went, and for a long time he did not come back. When he did, he had Mother Bickerdyke with him.*

*"I was glad to have your boy's help," she said cheerfully. "...I had to satisfy myself. They ain't nobody alive left out there. Now I know that, I can sleep. You ought to be asleep yourself, son." She peered at him, holding her lantern high. "Wounded, ain't you? That's a mighty messy-looking bandage you got there. Let me fix it" whereupon she did.*

Like Mrs Bickerdyke scouring the wilderness in the dark with a lantern for the sake of the dead, today's believer **"sheweth mercy"** Romans 12:8 in scouring **"the darkness of this world"** Ephesians 6:12 **"with the light of the glorious gospel of Christ"** 2 Corinthians 4:4 for the sake of the dead as Paul reminds the Ephesians. **"And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins...But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)"** Ephesians 2:1, 4-5.

### ***"Stretched seventy-five miles"***

Mrs Bickerdyke's hospital work was demanding in the extreme for both herself and the volunteers who worked with her. *For the first ten days after the Donelson battle, she never slept in a bed or took off her clothes. "I felt," she said afterward, "like my nerves was stretched seventy-five miles." They were steel nerves, and equal to the tension.* As Paul states, with the same application to today's believer **"And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work"** 2 Corinthians 9:8.

### ***"The one person...who outranks me"***

By 1864 General William T. Sherman<sup>52</sup> had assumed command of the Union Army in the Western Theatre of the war where Mrs Bickerdyke ministered. He too saw her as indispensable but Mrs Bickerdyke's forthright manner still rankled with some senior officers and those close to them. One day, a colonel came to Sherman with a complaint *that his wife had been grossly insulted by a nasty old woman.*

*"I didn't know we had any nasty old women in our army," General Sherman remarked. "Who might she be, now?"*

*"I believe she calls herself Bickerdyke, sir."*

*“Mother Bickerdyke?” The general laughed. “Oh, well, this is too bad. You’ve picked on the one person around here who outranks me. If you want to lodge a complaint against her, you’ll have to take it to President Lincoln.”*

**Conclusion**<sup>53</sup>



***"I lay down my life, that I might take it again"***

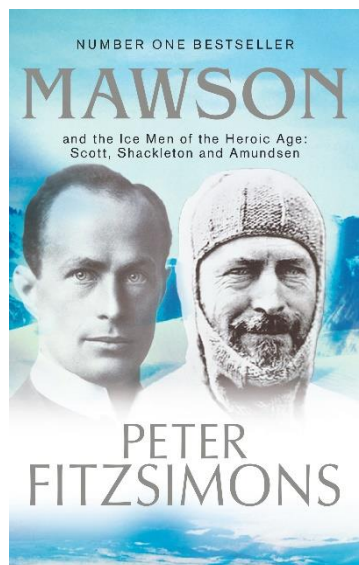
John 10:17



***"I am just going outside and may be some time"***

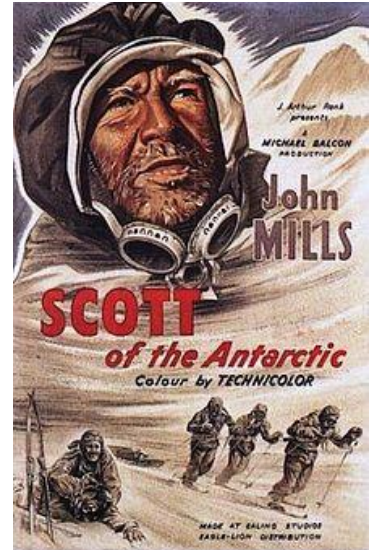
## Introduction

This writer's sister, who knows him well 😊, sent him for a Christmas present the book *Mawson* by Peter Fitzsimons<sup>54</sup>. Fitzsimons chronicles the life and work of Australia's outstanding Antarctic explorer of the early 20<sup>th</sup> century, Dr Sir Douglas Mawson<sup>55</sup> 1882-1958, who was an equally distinguished geologist and served on the staff of the University of Adelaide. It was Mawson and his team who were the first to reach the South Magnetic Pole on January 15<sup>th</sup> 1909.



### III-Fated 1912 Scott Expedition

Mawson's considerable Antarctic achievements were to have lasting value in that they were of a specific scientific nature. However, Mawson and his achievements were overshadowed by the ill-fated Scott expedition of 1911-1912. Captain Sir Robert Falcon Scott RN with four companions; Dr Edward 'Bill' Wilson, Captain Lawrence Oates of the Inniskilling Dragoons, Lieutenant Henry 'Birdie' Bowers of the Royal Indian Marine Service and Petty Officer Edgar 'Taffy' Evans RN trekked to the South Geographic Pole and reached it on January 18<sup>th</sup> 1912. They were disappointed though to find that a Norwegian expedition led by Roald Amundsen had got there over a month earlier, on December 14<sup>th</sup> 1911 by a hitherto unknown route.



Tragically, Scott and his companions perished on the return journey from the Pole and it was this tragedy that caught the imagination and sympathy of the entire world for decades afterwards. Ealing Studios even made a film of the Scott expedition released in 1948 entitled *Scott of the Antarctic*<sup>56</sup> starring the veteran actor John Mills. This writer remembers being taken to see the film in a school outing in 1955. This was in Sydney, Australia, but almost nothing was said about Dr Sir Douglas Mawson.

It was as if after the immediate adulation had died down that Solomon's observation was then oddly being fulfilled with respect to Dr Sir Douglas Mawson and his lasting achievements against the challenge of the Antarctic that had consumed Captain Scott and his men. ***"There was a little city, and few men within it; and there came a great king against it, and besieged it, and built great bulwarks against it: Now there was found in it a poor wise man, and he by his wisdom delivered the city; yet no man remembered that same poor man. Then said I, Wisdom is better than strength: nevertheless the poor man's wisdom is despised, and his words are not heard"*** Ecclesiastes 9:14-16.

The believer may nevertheless be encouraged that God remembers and has regard for ***"a poor wise man,"*** as God said through Isaiah and



Biblical lessons emerge even from the tragedy of Captain Scott and his men. ***“For all those things hath mine hand made, and all those things have been, saith the LORD: but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at my word”*** Isaiah 66:2.

### Challenge of the Antarctic

With that basis, the question arises, why had Captain Scott and his men died? The simple answer is that in spite of meticulous preparation, they ran short of provisions. Such a shortage could prove fatal in the Antarctic and did for Captain Scott and his men who died of slow starvation compounded by the effects of acute frostbite and prolonged exposure to unseasonably severe weather. That is mainly how the Biblical lessons arise but first the challenge of the Antarctic must be understood with respect to polar exploration.

The South Geographic and Magnetic Poles are located on the great polar plateau. Unaware of Amundsen’s pioneering route Scott and other early polar explorers got up onto the plateau via the Beardmore Glacier<sup>57</sup> that stretches for 125 miles and descends over 7000 feet from the plateau to the Ross Ice Shelf. The round trip for Captain Scott and his men from their base camp to the South Geographic Pole and



**The Beardmore Glacier 1956**

back would have been almost 1900 miles, often over very hard terrain and as stated in daunting weather.

The matter of provisions was therefore critical, as indeed it is for today’s believer who is as Paul states among ***“strangers and pilgrims on the earth”*** Hebrews 11:13. Like Captain Scott and his men for their journey, today’s pilgrim can make meticulous advance provision for his earthly journey for example with respect to education, financial investment, healthcare and various forms of insurance. However, without God’s provision, the pilgrim’s journey, like the Antarctic was for Captain Scott and his men, is too great a challenge as God said to Elijah.



***“The journey is too great for thee” – God’s Provision of Scripture***

***“And the angel of the LORD came again the second time, and touched him, and said, Arise and eat; because the journey is too great for thee”*** 1 Kings 19:7.

As 1 Kings 19:7 indicates, the Lord’s equivalent provision for today’s pilgrim includes scripture, as the Lord Jesus Christ said in Luke 4:4 ***“And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.”*** That word must come from the right source as Paul states with respect to ***“wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness”*** 1 Timothy 6:3. Beware of junk food that is merely ***“the word of men”*** and not ***“in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe”*** 1 Thesalonians 2:13.

To appreciate the difference see this extract in answer to Bible corrupter Edwin Palmer<sup>58</sup>.

*Edwin Palmer’s attacks on all 194 scriptures that he referred to were based on falsehood, Colossians 3:9, wilful ignorance, 1 Corinthians 14:38 and downright stupidity “without understanding” Jeremiah 5:21.*

*In sum, Edwin Palmer in The NIV: The Making of a Contemporary Translation Chapter 14 Isn’t the King James Version Good Enough? (The KJV and the NIV Compared) took away the “fine meal...cakes,” the beefsteak “tender and good,” “butter, and milk” Genesis 18:6, 7, 8 “Butter and honey” Isaiah 7:15 and left only “the cucumbers, and the melons, and the leeks, and the onions, and the garlick” Number 11:5 “out of the land of Egypt...the iron furnace” Jeremiah 11:4.*

The answer to Edwin Palmer’s question is that *only* the King James Version is good enough because only the King James Version is declared by its genuine adherents to be<sup>59</sup> *“the Law and the Gospel of God as the Rule for the whole life and government of Christian Princes...this Book, the most valuable thing that this world affords. Here is Wisdom [Revelation 13:18]; This is the royal Law [James 2:8]; These are the lively Oracles of God [Acts 7:38, Romans 3:2, Hebrews 5:12, 1 Peter 4:11].”*

No-one says that about modern Bible versions, not even their most ardent supporters. The King James Version therefore ensures that ***“The***

**righteous eateth to the satisfying of his soul**" Proverbs 13:25 as Paul exhorts Timothy **"If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained"** 1 Timothy 4:6.

By God's provision of *scripture* today's pilgrim may therefore finish well like Paul. **"I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith"** 2 Timothy 4:7.

### ***"The journey is too great for thee" – God's Provision of Sacrifice***

Scott recorded in his diary the self-sacrifice of Captain Lawrence Oates who walked out into a blizzard and perished when the four remaining members of Scott's team were 32 miles from a major supply depot his expedition had set up and which would have saved their lives if they had been able to cover the distance. Petty Officer Edgar Evans had died 300 miles back at the foot of the Beardmore Glacier, as Scott also recorded in his diary.

Oates had been suffering from badly frost-bitten feet that were turning gangrenous. He knew that he was slowing his comrades down and sacrificed himself in the hope that they would then be able to make it to safety. Captain Oates' self-sacrificial act is commemorated in John Charles Dollman's painting entitled *A Very Gallant Gentleman*, see graphic, from the memorial to Oates<sup>60</sup> erected by the search party that found Scott and his two remaining companions Wilson and Bowers in November 1912, along with Scott's diary.

A summary statement reads:

*Oates' body was never found. Near where he was presumed to have died, the search party erected a cairn and cross bearing the inscription; "Hereabouts died a very gallant gentleman, Captain L. E. G. Oates, of the Inniskilling Dragoons. In March 1912, returning from the Pole, he walked willingly to his death in a blizzard, to try and save his comrades, beset by hardships."*

Captain Scott recorded that Captain Oates' last words were *"I am just going outside and may be some time."*

It is easy to imagine another very gallant Gentleman stating to ***"all the host of heaven"*** 1 Kings 22:19, 2 Chronicles 18:18 that *"I am just going outside down to earth and may be some time."* However, this is ***"what the scripture saith"*** Romans 11:2.

**“I will give...my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world...I lay down my life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father”** John 6:51, 10:17-18.

That is God’s provision of *sacrifice* with respect to the Lord Jesus Christ and **“the sacrifice of himself”** Hebrews 9:26 ensures that death cannot get a permanent hold on today’s pilgrim in the way that physical death slew Captain Scott and his men.

The Lord Jesus Christ promises that, with a challenge to all. **“...I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?”** John 11:25-26.

***“The journey is too great for thee” – God’s Provision of Salvation***

God’s provision of sacrifice leads to an understanding of God’s provision of *salvation* for today’s pilgrim, which in turn stems from God’s provision of scripture as Paul states to Timothy. **“And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus”** 2 Timothy 3:15.

Ironically, God’s provision of salvation for today’s pilgrim is illustrated by the discovery of Scott’s last camp in November 1912 after the Antarctic winter had subsided so that the search party could set out. The camp lay only 11 miles from the major supply depot



**The Southern Ocean**

that would have saved the lives of Captain Scott and his two last companions, Dr Edward Wilson and Lieutenant Henry Bowers.

With the search team was a Norwegian, Tryggve Gran. Noting the discovery to be a specifically British tragedy, Gran the Norwegian stood back as other team members opened the tent flap to find Scott, Wilson and Bowers entombed inside. Communications were very slow back then and the search team only learned of Amundsen’s successful expedition to the Pole from Scott’s diary, whereupon Irishman Tom Crean went over to Gran and congratulated him on his nation’s success. Tom

Crean, however, was himself an interesting character. As Petty Officer Crean RN, he could have been chosen to accompany Scott to the pole instead of Edgar Evans but Scott chose Evans and Tom Crean survived. Crean could then have said with David **“...but truly as the LORD liveth...there is but a step between me and death”** 1 Samuel 20:3.

Given enough time, though, everyone takes that step. God's provision of salvation ensures that the very *next* step destines today's pilgrim to end up in the *right* place, as ironically is also illustrated by Captain Scott and his men. They remain in the Antarctic but the seaward shift of the Ross Ice Shelf destines Scott, Oates, Wilson and Bowers to be conveyed inexorably to the Southern Ocean<sup>61</sup> by the year 2275, it is estimated. Today's pilgrim too has a sure and certain destiny as Paul explains and which is a great encouragement.

**“For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself”** Philippians 3:20-21.

### **Compelling Testimonies**

Two of Scott's men who died with him left compelling testimonies in the face of certain death showing that they were blessed at the hour of death with being able to bear staunch witness to Philippians 4:7 ***“the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.”***

### **Testimonies of Dr Edward ‘Bill’ Wilson and Lieutenant Henry ‘Birdie’ Bowers**

This is in part what Dr Edward ‘Bill’ Wilson, doctor for the ill-fated Scott expedition to the South Geographic Pole, 1911-1912<sup>62</sup>, wrote to his parents in his last note to them.

*Dear old Dad and Mother,*

*The end has come and with it an earnest looking forward to the day when we shall meet together in the hereafter. Death has no terrors for me. I am only sorry for my beloved Ory\* and for all of you dear people but it is God's will and all is for the best...God knows I have no fear in meeting Him – for He will be merciful to all of us...we have done all for the best believing in His guidance and we have both believed that*

*whatever is, is His will, and in that faith I am prepared to meet Him and leave all you loved ones in His care till His own time is fulfilled.*

*Now God be with you all,*

*Your own loving Ted.*

\*Dr Wilson's wife Oriana. To his wife Oriana Dr Wilson wrote:

*All is for the best to those that love God\* and...we have both loved Him all our lives. All is well*

\*Romans 8:28, AV1611, free quotation

Another believer who died in the comfort of Romans 8:33 ***"Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth"*** was Lieutenant Henry 'Birdie' Bowers of the ill-fated 1911-1912 Scott Expedition to the South Geographical Pole.

Peter Fitzsimons describes Bowers as a 27-year-old God-fearing Scotsman of the Royal Indian Marine Service. He had been assigned to catching pirates in the Persian Gulf and to survey the Irrawaddy River, Burma. In assisting the loading of the ship *Terra Nova* to take the expedition to Antarctica, Bowers fell through the main hatch 19 feet onto a pile of pig iron, picked himself up, dusted himself off and continued on, thereby reckoned by Captain Scott RN as just the man to join the expedition. Bowers was the expedition's polar navigator. His last letter to his mother said this.

*22 March 1912*

*My own Dearest Mother*

*...my trust is still in Him and the abounding grace of my Lord and Saviour whom you brought me up to trust in...*

*When man's extremity is reached God's help may make things light and thus the end will be painless enough for myself...*

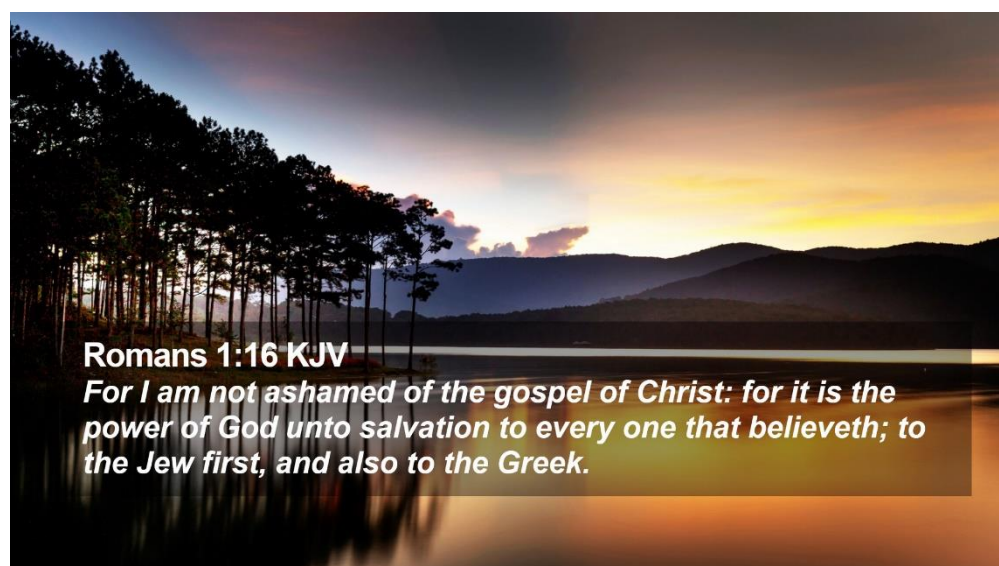
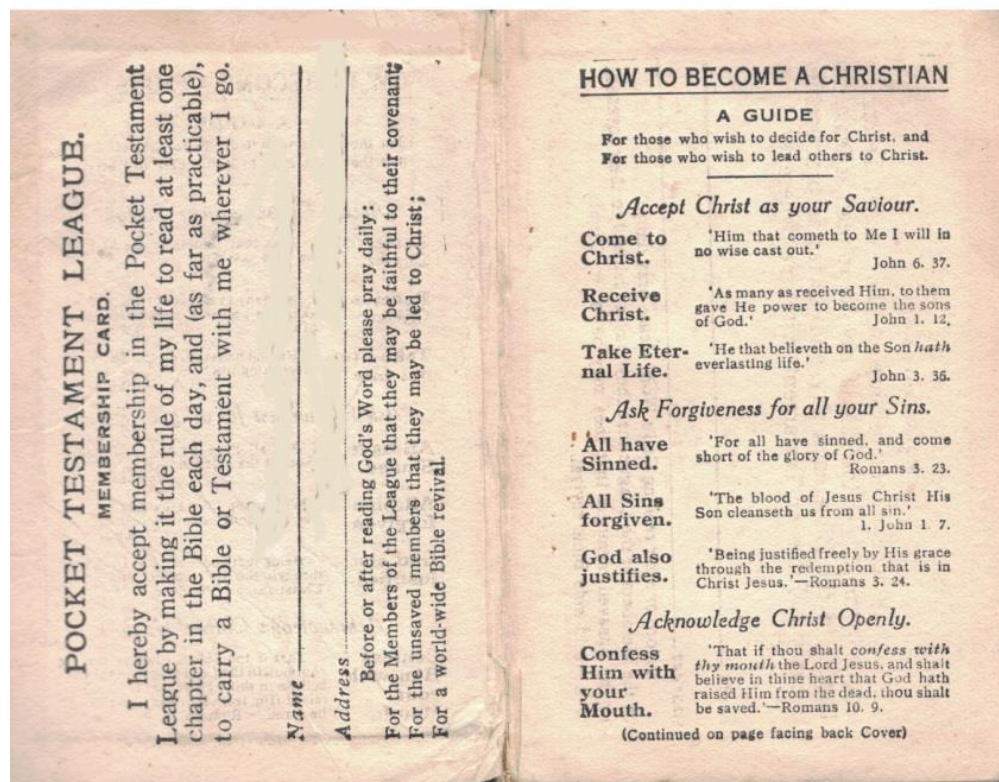
*Your ever loving son to the end of this life and the next when we will meet and where God shall wipe away the tears from our eyes.*

***"For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive"***

1 Corinthians 15:22

## Pocket Testament League<sup>63</sup>

Pocket Testament League gave 400,000 Testaments to men of the BEF in 1914<sup>64</sup>. 7 million British and Old Dominion troops<sup>65</sup> received them in WW1<sup>66</sup>.



## The Angels of Mons

*“I will deliver thee, and thou shalt glorify me” Psalm 50:15*



### *The Angels of Mons – Our Protective God*

*“Shining Angels throw a protective curtain around men from the Lincolnshire Regiment at Mons.” Illustration by Alfred Pearse published in The Chariots of God, by A. Churchwoman, 1915*

***“What hath God wrought!”*** Numbers 23:23

Though it is over a 100 years since the Great War 1914-1918 it is well to remember the great deliverance that God wrought for the British nation at that time and which resounds for the English-speaking peoples to this day. That deliverance centred on the first major action that the BEF, British Expeditionary Force, fought against the enemy, near the Belgian town of Mons in August 1914.

***“I will deliver thee”*** Psalm 50:15

Bible-believing researcher Bruce Horner<sup>67</sup> writes as follows concerning the vivid depiction<sup>68</sup> above.

*In 2 Kings 6:17 we read,*

*“And Elisha prayed, and said, LORD, I pray thee, open his eyes, that he may see. And the LORD opened the eyes of the young man; and he saw: and, behold, the mountain [was] full of horses and chariots of fire round about Elisha”...*



*[W]e are similarly instructed of deliverance by the Psalmist in Psalm 50:15  
 “And call upon me in the day of trouble: I will deliver thee, and thou shalt glorify me.”*

*During the World War of 1914-18...God fulfilled His Promise, as far as Great Britain was concerned, in a most noticeable manner. In the early months of World War I the contemptible little British Army, as the German High Command termed it, was hurriedly equipped and sent across the Channel to support the French and Belgian Allies; but these combined forces were far weaker in guns and man power than the Germans, and so, fighting a dogged rearguard action, they fell back before the terrific impact of massed enemy attacks. Serious defeat and tremendous losses appeared inevitable; but, during two days fighting around Mons, the German advance was halted long enough to allow the British Expeditionary Force to withdraw...*

*[T]he “Angels of Mons”...[was] an event claimed to have been seen in late August 1914...*

*While a detachment of British soldiers was retiring through Mons under very heavy German artillery and machinegun fire in August 1914 they knelt beside a hastily erected barricade and endeavoured to hold up the enemy advance... See graphic.*

*Suddenly, firing on both sides stopped dead and a silence fell...the astonished British saw four or five wonderful beings much bigger than men, between themselves and the halted Germans. They were white robed and bareheaded, and seemed rather to float than stand. Their backs were towards the British, and they faced the enemy with outstretched arm and hand as if to say: “Stop. Thus far and no further”...Next thing the British knew was that the Germans were retreating in great disorder...*

*Before the surprised British were able to realise what had happened, the whole of the apparently victorious enemy force were retreating in great disorder. This allowed the British and the Allied Armies to reform and fall back upon a line of defence several miles further west, where they “dug in”. Then began...“trench warfare” which continued for over three years...until the Spring of 1918.*

***“A succourer of many”*** Romans 16:2

Mr Horner describes a second great deliverance that God wrought for Britain and her allies in the summer of 1918 that was instrumental in breaking the deadlock of trench warfare on the Western Front and led to the Allied victory in November 1918<sup>69</sup>. Though four long and terrible years were to elapse between the two deliverances, the Lord was nevertheless ***“a succourer of many”***

in individual distress. One account from 1915 by researcher Mr Harold Begbie<sup>70</sup> is as follows.

***“Wounded for our transgressions”*** Isaiah 53:5

*Rev. R. F. Morton said... “Now and again...a wounded man on the field is conscious of a comrade in white coming with help and even delivering him. One of our men who had heard of this story again and again and had put it down to hysterical excitement had an experience...he himself fell...as he lay helpless...he saw one in white coming to him... The white-robed came near and bent over him. The man lost consciousness for a moment, and when he came round he [was] out of danger. The white-robed still stood by him, and the man, looking at his hand, said, ‘You are wounded in your hand’...He answered, ‘Yes, that is an old wound that has opened again lately.’” Never forget:*

***“But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed”*** Isaiah 53:5.

***‘The Angel of the Covenant’***

Begbie reports further *“There is a wonderful story of a man called by the soldiers ‘A Comrade in White,’ who is going about at the front, helping the wounded...many soldiers [had seen] Him. He was supposed to be ‘The Angel of the Covenant,’ our Lord Himself.”* Our covenant<sup>71</sup> with ‘The Angel of the Covenant’ is ***“the royal law”*** James 2:8 the King James Bible. It must be kept for deliverance.

***“Thou shalt glorify me”*** Psalm 50:15

Observe therefore last part of Psalm 50:15. Rest assured no ***“peace on earth”*** without ***“glory to God in the highest”*** Luke 2:14 and similarly rest assured no deliverance from evil without exaltation of ***“the God of my salvation.”*** ***“The LORD liveth...and let the God of my salvation be exalted. Great deliverance giveth he to his king...and to his seed for evermore”*** Psalm 18:46, 50.

Therefore, individually and nationally ***“Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God”*** 1 Corinthians 10:31 especially keeping ***“the royal law”*** James 2:8.

***“The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever,  
that we may do all the words of this law”***

Deuteronomy 29:29

## The Lord - The Unknown Warrior



**11<sup>th</sup> November 1920: King George V  
placing a wreath on the coffin of the Unknown Warrior<sup>72</sup>**



**The Tomb of the Unknown Warrior in Westminster Abbey<sup>73</sup>**  
*“And they buried him in the city of David among the kings, because he had  
 done good in Israel, both toward God, and toward his house”*

2 Chronicles 24:16



***The Second Battle of Ypres April 24<sup>th</sup> 1915***

by Richard Jack, 146 x 234½ in., at the Canadian War Museum<sup>74</sup>

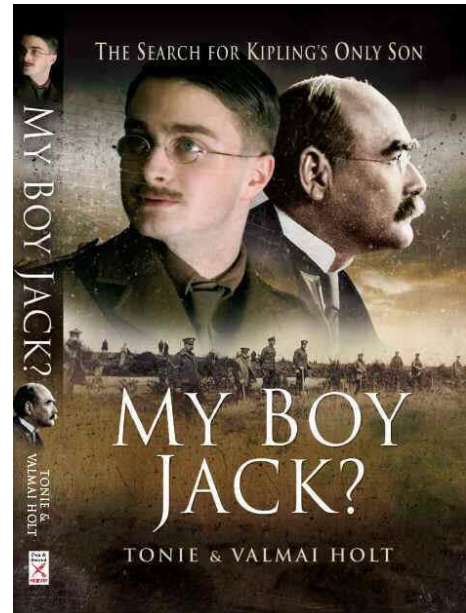


**Australians in the trenches at Fromelles July 19<sup>th</sup> 1916<sup>75</sup>**

Only three of the men pictured survived the battle; all three were wounded<sup>76</sup>



**Lieutenant John Kipling 1897-1915<sup>77</sup>**



***“Thine only son whom thou lovest”***  
Genesis 22:2<sup>78</sup>

## The Lord – The Unknown Warrior

**2 Chronicles 23:9, 11, 16, 24:2, 14-16**

23:9. *“Moreover Jehoiada the priest delivered to the captains of hundreds spears, and bucklers, and shields, that had been king David’s, which were in the house of God...”*

23:11. *“Then they brought out the king’s son [Joash], and put upon him the crown, and gave him the testimony, and made him king. And Jehoiada and his sons anointed him, and said, God save the king...”*

23:16. *“And Jehoiada made a covenant between him, and between all the people, and between the king, that they should be the LORD’S people...”*

24:2. *“And Joash [the king] did that which was right in the sight of the LORD all the days of Jehoiada the priest...”*

24:14. *“And they offered burnt offerings in the house of the LORD continually all the days of Jehoiada.”*

24:15. *“But Jehoiada waxed old, and was full of days when he died; an hundred and thirty years old was he when he died.”*

24:16. *“And they buried him in the city of David among the kings, because he had done good in Israel, both toward God, and toward his house.”*

### **Acknowledgement**

This message is based largely on a message by Dr. Peter S. Ruckman<sup>79</sup> specifically the aspects that address the Lord Jesus Christ as the greatest Warrior and yet The Unknown Warrior. Dr. Ruckman’s thoughts on this topic are gratefully acknowledged.

### **Introduction**

2 Chronicles 23, 24 show that Jehoiada the priest was a great warrior against evil, a leader of warriors and a godly leader.

A nation can owe a lot to its warriors, if they have godly leadership.

It’s one Warrior in particular that we’ll be looking at and what we all owe Him. Exodus 15:3 says of Him *“The LORD is a man of war [a Warrior]: the LORD is his name.”*

So it may seem strange that I refer to the Lord Jesus Christ as The Unknown Warrior. That is the term used for the unidentified casualty buried in Westminster Abbey, whereas Christians would say that the Lord Jesus Christ is not only identified but well-known.



However, the term The Unknown Warrior does apply to the Lord Jesus Christ as I will explain later.

For now, we should think first about the term Remembrance. When writing to the Philippian Church, Paul said ***“I thank my God upon every remembrance of you”*** Philippians 1:3.

Remembrance as it applies to our warriors should encourage thankfulness to God, for what was endured on our behalf in the world wars of the last century.

### ***Remembrance***

It is right therefore to remember those like The Unknown Warrior, who was buried in Westminster Abbey on Remembrance Day, November 11<sup>th</sup>, 1920, with full military honours, in the presence of King George V.

I believe further that The Unknown Warrior has a special significance for the child of God, in two respects.

The first of these is the privilege of possessing and reading the scriptures. The second is with respect to the Lord Jesus Christ, as I’ve indicated.

### ***The Unknown Warrior and “The Scripture of Truth” Daniel 10:21***

The Unknown Warrior is closely associated with this Book, the Holy Bible. Portions of five Texts of scripture from this Book are inscribed on the black marble gravestone covering the tomb.

Four New Testament Texts are arranged around the top, base and sides of the gravestone<sup>80</sup>. They are as follows:

John 15:13 ***“Greater love hath no man than this.”***

1 Corinthians 15:22 ***“In Christ shall all be made alive.”***

2 Corinthians 6:9 ***“Unknown and yet well known, dying and behold we live.”***

2 Timothy 2:19 ***“The Lord knoweth them that are his.”***

The fifth Text is from the Old Testament and it is located on the lower face of the gravestone. The words are from 2 Chronicles 24:16, the verse that was read out earlier.

***“They buried him...among the kings, because he had done good...toward God, and toward his house.”***

It is strange to think of any good that was done in the world wars ***“toward God, and toward his house”*** but the inscribed scriptures show that some good was done and you and I are the beneficiaries.



The Allied victories meant that the Holy Bible could continue to be readily obtained, read, studied, memorized, believed and preached in the English-speaking nations. Historian Edmond Paris<sup>81</sup> shows how the Jesuit Order set up the world wars. Paris' work is an impeccable source.

Rome's strategy was *overt*, in WW1 and 2. Vatican victories in either of those conflicts would have spelt the abrupt end of the possession and circulation of any Protestant Bibles, such as Luther's or the Authorized King James.

It should be noted how much the Jesuits<sup>82</sup> hated the 1611 Holy Bible. The following quotation is from an exposé of the Jesuit conspiracy written by The Abbate Leone<sup>83</sup> and published in 1848. This is what the Jesuits had to say about the Authorized King James Bible of 1611.

*Then the Bible, that serpent which with head erect and eyes flashing threatens us with its venom while it trails along the ground, shall be changed into a rod as soon as we are able to seize it [1881, Revised Version, Westcott and Hort, Cambridge University; 1881, 'Originals-onlyism,' Hodge and Warfield, Princeton Theological Seminary, "**Traitors, heady, highminded**" 2 Timothy 3:4]...for three centuries past this cruel asp has left us no repose. You well know with what folds it entwines us and with what fangs it gnaws us.*

American Baptist Eric Jon Phelps is a long-term researcher of Vatican strategy. His comment on that Jesuit statement is that *As The Authorized Version is the bulwark for the very Reformation the [Jesuit] Order is oath-bound to destroy it*<sup>84</sup>.

Rome lost WW1, 2. Thank God we still have "***the scripture of truth***" Daniel 10:21.

**Aside:** Not long ago, a Christian fundamentalist told me that he did not want to get involved in the Bible version debate. Of course, there is no Bible version debate. There's the facts and the falsehoods, "***the scripture of truth***" Daniel 10:21 and the Catholic satanic counterfeits<sup>85</sup>. I like what Winston Churchill<sup>86</sup> said about the enemy in 1941. It applies in principle to the enemies of this Book "***the scripture of truth***" Daniel 10:21, whoever they are, whether they be saved or lost.



The Right Honourable  
Sir Winston Churchill  
KG, OM, CH, TD, DL, FRS, RA

*“Then did I beat them small as  
the dust before the wind”*

Psalm 18:42 any and all

*“We ask no favours of the enemy. We seek from them no compunction... Where you have been the least resisted there you have been the most brutal...”*

[Note what they did to Sister Riplinger<sup>87</sup>] *We will have no truce or parley with you, or the grisly gang who work your wicked will* [Bible critics have a Bible verse. Mark 5:9 “...*My name is Legion: for we are many*”]. *You do your worst - and we will do our best. Perhaps it may be our turn soon; perhaps it may be our turn now...*”

It is:

*“For they have sown the wind, and they shall reap the whirlwind...”*

Hosea 8:7.



## *The Unknown Warrior and the Lord Jesus Christ*

### *The Greatest Warrior*

Turning to The Unknown Warrior and the Lord Jesus Christ, it's important to understand that as well as being The Unknown Warrior, the Lord Jesus Christ was and is the greatest Warrior that ever lived. That's quite an achievement because the scripture reveals some great warriors.

As mentioned, 2 Chronicles 23, 24 show that Jehoiada the priest was a great warrior against evil. Joshua, David and David's mighty men were great warriors and others could be cited. The history of warfare reveals many great warriors but I think some of the greatest of them served in WW1.

I draw attention to an incident from April 1915 that shows what great warriors fought in WW1 because in some respects they illustrated how the Lord fought at Calvary. I'm referring to men of the Canadian Army who underwent a great ordeal at that time and helped secure an essential victory.

Extracts from summary reports<sup>88</sup> explain what happened.

*In the first week of April 1915, the Canadian troops were moved...to a bulge in the Allied line in front of the City of Ypres. This was the famed — or notorious — Ypres Salient, where the British and Allied line pushed into the German line in a concave bend. The Germans held the higher ground and were able to fire into the Allied trenches from the north, the south and the east. On the Canadian right were two British divisions, and on their left a French division, the 45th (Algerian)...*

*Across No-Man's-Land, the Germans had achieved a local superiority of seven and a half divisions to the Allied forces' six and were far stronger in artillery support...*

*Here on April 22, the Germans sought to remove the Salient by introducing a new weapon, poison gas. Following an intensive artillery bombardment, they released 160 tons of chlorine gas from cylinders... As thick clouds of yellow-green chlorine drifted over their trenches the French defences crumbled, and the troops, completely bemused by this terrible weapon, died or broke and fled...*

*The fierce battle of St. Julien lay ahead. On April 24, the Germans attacked in an attempt to obliterate the Salient once and for all. Another violent bombardment was followed by another gas attack in the same pattern as before. This time the target was the Canadian line. Here, through terrible fighting, withered with shrapnel and machine-gun fire...violently sick and gasping for air through soaked and muddy handkerchiefs, they held on until reinforcements arrived...*

*So even under the horrible surprise of gas the Canadians in their first major battle held the line against many times their numbers.*

*The Canadians were withdrawn from the battle on May 3, being relieved by the British. Losses had been heavy. Of a maximum divisional strength of 18,000 that had started the battle, 5975 had become casualties, of whom over 1000 were fatal...*

*[Yet] the Canadians to a man seemed obsessed with the idea that this was their particular battle and that they would perish where they stood rather than give way...*

**Aside:** The Canadian military historian Norm Christie<sup>89</sup> has said that in the world wars, Canada was not threatened, the Canadians fought for others. That is like Matthew 27:42 ***“He saved others; himself he cannot save...”***

It is noteworthy that just before WW1 the Canadian Prime Minister said<sup>90</sup> *“When Britain is at war, Canada is at war. There is no distinction.”* The Australian Federal Treasurer<sup>91</sup> said *“If Britain goes to her Armageddon, [Australia] will go with her.”* Never forget that *one* Book, the Book that still governs the English-speaking nations constitutionally<sup>92</sup>, creates and sustains that family unity as Paul states ***“And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it...”*** 1 Corinthians 12:26.

Ypres never fell to the Germans.

Three observations can be made about the Canadian resistance at Ypres:

- It was *against many times their numbers*
- It was against *this terrible new weapon, poison gas*
- *they would perish where they stood rather than give way.*

That was like what happened to the Lord Jesus Christ at Calvary. Note the parallels.

### ***against many times their numbers***

The Lord fought against *overwhelming numbers* and won. This is one reason why the Lord Jesus Christ is the greatest Warrior that ever lived.

He had ***“all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes...and all the council”*** against Him Mark 14:53, 55.

He had many that ***“bare false witness against him”*** Mark 14:56.

He had the king against Him and the king’s men of war because ***“Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked him”*** Luke 23:11.

He had the Roman governor against Him because ***“Pilate...delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified”*** Mark 15:15.

He had ***“the soldiers of the governor...the whole band of soldiers”*** against him. Of them Matthew states ***“they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head...and led him away to crucify him”*** Matthew 27:27, 30-31.

In addition, besides the enemies you could have seen, the Lord had ***“the princes of this world”*** against Him, as Paul writes in 1 Corinthians 2:8.

That's the ***"principalities...powers...the rulers of the darkness of this world...spiritual wickedness in high places"*** Ephesians 6:12 and especially ***"the prince of this world"*** John 12:31, 14:30. He was the Lord's old adversary from the wilderness battle Matthew 4:1-11.

No other soldier ever had to face all the adversaries *at one time* that the Lord Jesus Christ did but the Lord trusted in Isaiah 50:7.

***"For the Lord GOD will help me; therefore shall I not be confounded: therefore have I set my face like a flint, and I know that I shall not be ashamed."***  
And He wasn't.

The Lord won the battle at Calvary as He had won the battle in the wilderness, as Paul said in Colossians 2:15:

***"And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it [the cross]."***

They couldn't force Him to quit. They couldn't force Him to call down ***"more than twelve legions of angels"*** Matthew 26:53 to deliver Him. The Lord went the whole distance until as John says in John 19:30 ***"he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost."***

That's one reason why the Lord Jesus Christ is the greatest Warrior that ever lived, the superior enemy force He defeated, both natural and supernatural.

***this terrible new weapon***

The Lord had to face *this terrible new weapon* and all His earthly life, He *knew* He had to face it. Along with victory, He saw His suffering and death. This is another reason that He is the greatest Warrior of all time.

The Lord's method of execution that He commanded for Israel was stoning. In Numbers 15:32-36, when a man of Israel broke the Sabbath, ***"the LORD commanded Moses...The man shall be surely put to death: all the congregation shall stone him with stones without the camp."***

But the Romans used *this terrible new weapon* of crucifixion. Death by stoning was brutal but fairly quick. Death by crucifixion was slow, like the worst effects of chlorine gas. Major Matthews<sup>93</sup> was a Canadian officer who experienced the gas attack of April 24<sup>th</sup> 1915. No gas masks were available. All the Canadians had to resist the gas were hastily improvised wet cloths to try to absorb the chlorine.

Major Matthews said this.

*This wall of vapour appeared to me to be at least fifteen feet in height, white on top, the remainder being of a greenish yellow colour...When the fumes were*

*fully on us, breathing became most difficult. It was hard to resist the temptation to tear away the damp rags from our mouths in the struggle for air...I don't suppose the worst of it lasted more than ten minutes but we could not have stood it much longer...The lungs [seemed] to refuse to do their duty...the worst cases...were just as bad twelve hours after and it was very difficult to get them back from the trench, the least exertion bringing on choking fits almost like convulsions.*

Major Matthews was a brave man, hope he's with the Lord now. However as Major Matthews indicated, death by chlorine gas would be slow and painful.

Death by crucifixion was the same.

Mark 15:25-37 record that the Lord and the two thieves hung on their crosses for 6 hours, from ***"the third hour...until the ninth hour."*** John records that the thieves were still alive after that time interval. That is why ***"the soldiers...brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him"*** John 19:32.

Clearly other men besides the Lord endured crucifixion but what is remarkable about the Lord's ordeal is that as a man, along with His victory, He saw it ahead of time for the best part of 30 years.

Because He *knew* about the *exact* nature of the fate that awaited Him from the prophecy of Psalm 22, especially Psalm 22:14-15.

***"I am poured out like water, and all my bones are out of joint: my heart is like wax; it is melted in the midst of my bowels [the term signifies both the upper and lower viscera]. My strength is dried up like a potsherd; and my tongue cleaveth to my jaws; and thou hast brought me into the dust of death."***

That was the Lord's personal account of His death in action ahead of time. He lived with that vision every waking moment of His earthly life for the best part of 30 years until He actually went to Calvary.

As the Lord told His disciples in Matthew 20:18-19 ***"the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death, And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify him."***

No soldier lives with that kind of expectation *for that amount of time.*

That's a second reason why the Lord is the greatest Warrior that ever lived, the certain knowledge of the terrible fate that awaited Him, *for almost His entire earthly life.* Yet He set his face like a flint and went on.



*they would perish where they stood rather than give way*

Then the Lord *would perish rather than give way*. As the Lord Himself declared ***“Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?”*** Matthew 26:53-54.

The Lord would perish rather than give way so that ***“the scriptures be fulfilled”*** to achieve an outstanding victory, the greatest victory of all time.

That’s a third reason why the Lord is the greatest Warrior of all time, because the Lord defeated ***“the last enemy”*** 1 Corinthians 15:26, namely death.

The Lord died on the cross John 19:30 but death could not *hold* the Lord Jesus Christ because He ***“did no sin”*** 1 Peter 2:22 and so ***“it was not possible that he should be holden of it”*** Acts 2:24 i.e. death.

So Paul could write in Romans 6:9 ***“Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him.”***

And death has no dominion over the child of God because as John explains in John 1:12 ***“But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name.”***

That power is ***“the power of an endless life”*** Hebrews 7:16. That is why the Lord said to Martha in John 11:25-26 ***“I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die.”*** If you believe in the Lord Jesus Christ as your sin-bearer and death-conqueror, you too will live forever according to ***the power of an endless life***.

So the Lord is the greatest Warrior because He won the greatest victory in that He alone defeated the strongest enemy and enabled ***“whosoever will”*** Revelation 22:17 to enjoy that victory as the Lord Himself said in Hebrews 2:13 ***“Behold I and the children which God hath given me.”***

Yet the Lord Jesus Christ is The Unknown Warrior. Why?

### ***The Unknown Warrior – No Record***

One reason why a warrior may be unknown is that there’s no record of his death, or only a partial record.

The Commonwealth War Graves Commission oversees over one million war burials from the world wars<sup>94</sup>. Over 200,000 are unknown, well over 10 times the population of Guisborough<sup>95</sup> where this writer lives.

For British and Commonwealth unknown graves of war dead, the inscription on the headstone reads *A Soldier of The Great War, Known Unto God* or *A*

*Soldier of The 1939-1945 War, Known Unto God.* The expression **“known unto God”** is from the 1611 Authorized King James Bible, Acts 15:18, Philipians 4:6 and the words were chosen by the famous author Rudyard Kipling<sup>96</sup>.

In that way the grave is marked but it's only a partial record. The soldier buried there is unknown, except to God.

You may know that Rudyard Kipling lost his only son, John Lockwood Kipling, in the Great War. John was killed, aged 18, at the battle of Loos in France that was fought during September 25<sup>th</sup>-26<sup>th</sup> 1915.

John Kipling was serving as an officer in the Irish Guards and the tragedy was commemorated in the film<sup>97</sup> *My Boy Jack*, where the part of John Kipling was played by Daniel Radcliffe aka Harry Potter. Lieutenant Kipling is one of the more honourable roles that Mr Radcliffe has performed to date.

**Aside:** Sir Michael Redgrave narrated the epic BBC series *The Great War*. Sir Michael<sup>98</sup> said that *“Loos was a dismal region...a shattered mining village...slag heaps, derelict machinery, ruined cottages...Loos, there was something chilling even about the name.”* The ordinary soldier does not choose the battlefield. He simply tries to survive it. Thankfully we have 2 Corinthians 2:14 **“Now thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of his knowledge by us in every place.”**

Rudyard Kipling travelled 1500 miles visiting war cemeteries in 1920 trying to find his son's grave but he was unsuccessful. All that exists of John Kipling's death is a partial record.

By contrast, you may say that we have a record of the Lord's death because we have the Holy Bible, as I pointed out. Thank God for Bible-based churches and groups and Bible conferences but by and large, the scripture is rejected in this country today, even though it is available.

In the 19<sup>th</sup> century the Roman Catholic writer F. W. Faber<sup>99</sup> said this. *“The [English] Protestant Bible...is part of the national mind, and the anchor of national seriousness.”*

It isn't any more. Rev M. J. Roberts<sup>100</sup> was editor of *The Banner of Truth* Magazine and minister of Greyfriars Free Church in Inverness. He said this in December 1994.

*The Bible is a lost book in Britain today.*

Over 20 years later, that is how it is for most folk today **“who go right on their ways”** Proverbs 9:15. Any open-air witness will confirm that.

For most folk, therefore, the Lord is The Unknown Warrior because they've rejected the Holy Bible and there's no other official record of His death. For most folk, the Lord remains unknown.

Anyone who doesn't know about the Lord Jesus Christ through the scripture will most likely never come to know Him personally as the Saviour. That's a tragedy.

### ***The Unknown Warrior – Unrecognizable***

Another reason why a soldier may be unknown is that he may be unrecognizable. After His Calvary sufferings, the Lord was unrecognizable like The Unknown Warrior buried in Westminster Abbey.

Isaiah 52:14 says of the Lord in prophecy that ***“As many were astonished at thee; his visage was so marred more than any man, and his form more than the sons of men.”***

Yet Isaiah 53:5 says of the Lord again in prophecy even with respect to the injuries that made Him unrecognisable.

***“But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.”***

Paul says in Romans 5:1 ***“Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:”***

That is why ***“the chastisement of our peace was upon him.”*** Your peace with God is ***“the wrath of God”*** John 3:36 that abode on Jesus Christ that made Him unrecognisable and we should never forget that.

### ***The Unknown Warrior – An Enemy***

A third reason that a soldier may be unknown is that he's an enemy.

Neither side in a war is really interested in who the other side's dead are. They don't bother recording them.

You may know of an investigation to identify by DNA analyses the remains of 250 British and Australian soldiers who were killed in the battle of Fromelles<sup>101</sup> in France on July 19<sup>th</sup>-20<sup>th</sup> 1916. The Germans buried these men in mass graves that were recently excavated.

The DNA analyses had identified 166 Australians by 2019 but without it all those men would have remained unknown.

The Lord Jesus Christ is unknown personally to most folk because He's an Enemy. If they're faced with Him through ***"the gospel of Christ"*** Romans 1:16, usually they don't want to know Him.

John 3:19, 20 explain why.

***"And this is the condemnation, that light [the Lord Jesus Christ] is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved."***

In other words, the Lord can pass perfect and precise judgement on your personal life regardless of your opinion on the matter one way or the other. That's why He's hated. That's why the world doesn't want to know Him. A man has to say with the Psalmist in Psalm 73:22 ***"So foolish was I, and ignorant: I was as a beast before thee"*** in order to come to know Jesus Christ. That's hard, especially for ***"all the proud men"*** Jeremiah 43:2, which is most of them.

It can be done, of course and that's not hard to prove.

Remember that every Christian believer was once one of those ***"that...hateth the light"*** as Paul describes in Philippians 3:18 ***"the enemies of the cross of Christ"*** and of the Lord Jesus Christ Himself.

It is God's mercy that overcomes the enmity.

As Paul says in Titus 3:3-6 ***"For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another. But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour;"***

That is also ***"the gospel of Christ"*** Romans 1:16. Salvation by the grace and mercy of God through faith in the Lord Jesus Christ brings with it reconciliation as Paul says in Romans 5:10 ***"For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life."***

Reconciliation is the bringing together of two parties, God and man that had been at enmity. That is what the Lord achieved at Calvary. Note especially therefore that phrase ***"we shall be saved by his life."*** That is our final point, because reconciliation is about life, not death.

### ***Conclusion – The Empty Tomb***

The Lord Jesus Christ differs from The Unknown Warrior in Westminster Abbey in at least one vital respect. The Lord's tomb is empty<sup>102</sup>. As the angel said to the women ***“upon the first day of the week”*** Luke 24:1, ***“Why seek ye the living among the dead. He is not here, but is risen”*** Luke 24:5, 6.

Many years later, the Lord Himself said in Revelation 1:18 ***“I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen;”*** You too can be ***“alive for evermore, Amen;”*** you too can have an empty tomb or indeed no tomb if you're alive when the Lord comes back because you can have ***“the power of an endless life”*** Hebrews 7:16. John 1:12 is still on offer.

If you have accepted the Lord's offer of ***“an endless life,”*** then you're no longer ***“far off”*** but you're ***“made nigh by the blood of Christ”*** with the Lord ***“by the cross having slain the enmity thereby”*** between the Lord and yourself so that you are now ***“accepted in the beloved”*** Ephesians 1:6, 2:13, 16. It has been said<sup>103</sup> that the loneliest people in the world are senior secondary school girls. That is an amazing statement considering how much in the way of friends, fun and excitement these girls are supposed to have but maybe that doesn't match how you are on the inside. It doesn't have to be that way. You can be ***“accepted in the beloved,”*** you can be ***“in Christ...a new creature”*** 2 Corinthians 5:17 and you can say with Paul ***“Christ liveth in me”*** Galatians 2:20.

Remember though that if you are already ***“in Christ”*** and know Him personally, then by searching the scriptures you will come to know Him further. Rudyard Kipling spent a year searching for his son John after WW1 and travelled 1500 miles but never found him. Yet the Lord said in Jeremiah 29:13 ***“Ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart.”*** The Lord Jesus Christ explained that statement in John 5:39 ***“Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.”*** That's a command, by the way, ***“Search the scriptures.”*** Obedience to that command so that you can know the Lord further makes the Lord's great victory at Calvary even greater. That fact too should always be part of our remembrance. Amen.

Finally, to other Bible believers who have been an encouragement to this writer, I am reminded of the book *Band of Brothers* by Stephen E. Ambrose about American paratroopers in Europe in WW2. One part of the book refers to Sergeant Mike Ranney<sup>104</sup>, who said this. ***“I cherish the memories of a question my grandson asked me the other day when he said, ‘Grandpa, were you a hero in the war?’ Grandpa said ‘No...but I served in a company of heroes’.”*** Thank you for your company. It means a lot.

## ANZAC Day April 25<sup>th</sup> and The Incomparable 29<sup>th</sup>

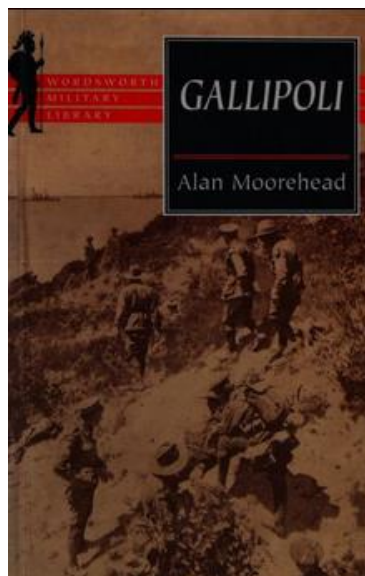
### Annual Observance

ANZAC Day<sup>105</sup> April 25<sup>th</sup> is faithfully observed annually in Australia and New Zealand. April 25<sup>th</sup> 1915 was the first day of the Gallipoli campaign aimed at defeating the Central Powers' ally Turkey. See Alan Moorehead's excellent account<sup>106</sup>.

### Allied Amphibious Landings

The campaign began with Allied amphibious landings on the Gallipoli Peninsula on the morning of April 25<sup>th</sup> 1915. For that reason, this writer believes that April 25<sup>th</sup> should also be commemorated annually as British 29<sup>th</sup> Division<sup>107</sup> Day.

### The Incomparable 29<sup>th</sup>

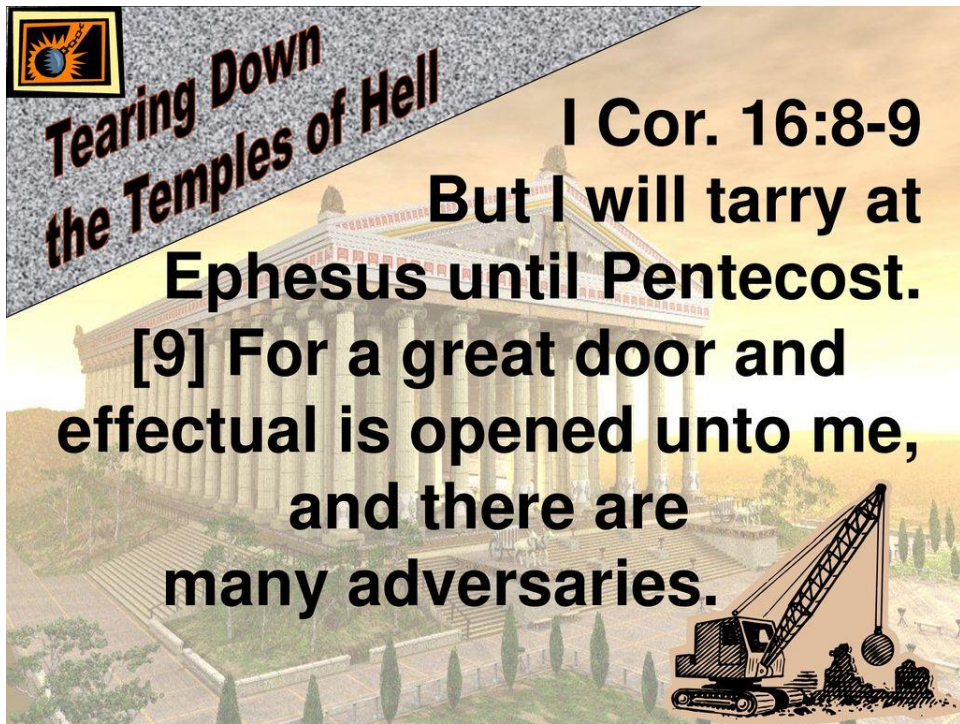


Air Commodore Samson came flying over Sedd-el-Bahr at this moment, and looking down saw that the calm blue sea was 'absolutely red with blood' for a distance of fifty yards from the shore, 'a horrible sight to see'. Red ripples washed up on the beach, and everywhere the calm surface of the water was whipped up into a ghastly discoloured foam by thousands of falling bullets. The sun was shining brightly.

The 29<sup>th</sup> Division landed at Cape Helles at the tip of the Gallipoli Peninsula on the morning of April 25<sup>th</sup> 1915. The division encountered ferocious Turkish resistance. Air Commodore Samson, a Royal Navy aviator, flying his scout aircraft over Cape Helles described the scene<sup>108</sup>:

The survivors of the 29<sup>th</sup> staggered ashore under the hail of enemy fire, dug in and hung on. Though understandably threadbare by 1918, the division became known as The Incomparable 29<sup>th</sup>.





Pentecost 2023 could be significant. That said, the dates can be updated as necessary:

### Passover Pentecost Whitsun Typology 2023

Together with Song of Solomon 2:10-13<sup>110</sup> study “*of the times and the seasons*” 1 Thessalonians 5:1 gives the earliest date for the Rapture. This site<sup>111</sup> states Shavuot, the “Feast of Weeks,” is celebrated seven weeks after Passover (Pesach). Since the counting of this period (sefirat ha-omer) begins on the second evening of Passover, Shavuot takes place exactly 50 days after the (first) seder. Hence, following the Greek word for “fifty,” Shavuot is also referred to sometimes as *Pentecost*. Noting that<sup>112</sup>:

#### Passover Seder

<b>Begins</b>	15 <u>Nisan</u>
<b>Ends</b>	21 Nisan (22 Nisan in traditional Diaspora communities)
<b>2023 date</b>	Sunset, 5 April – nightfall, 13 April (8 days)

Therefore<sup>113</sup> [The date of]...the **Feast of Weeks** or **Pentecost** (Koinē Greek: Πεντηκοστή) in English...is directly linked to that of Passover; the Torah

mandates the seven-week Counting of the Omer, beginning on the second day of Passover, to be immediately followed by Shavuot.

2023 date      Sunset, 25 May – nightfall, 27 May

This site<sup>114</sup> explains that Passover 2023 begins at sundown on Wednesday, April 5 and ends the evening of Thursday, April 13. The first Passover seder is on the evening of Wednesday, April 5, and the second Passover seder takes place on the evening of Thursday, April 6.

Seven weeks from the evening of Thursday, April 6 bring the date to Sunset, 25 May. Certain related key dates on the traditional church calendar are set out as follows:

Noting Mark 16:9 “Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene...” this site<sup>115</sup> states **Easter...or Resurrection Sunday**, is a Christian festival and holiday commemorating the resurrection of Jesus from the dead, described in the New Testament as having occurred on the third day after his burial following his crucifixion by the Romans at Calvary c. 30 AD [33 AD. See **Typology Annotations** following].

<b>Easter Sunday 2023 date</b>	April 9 (Western)
	April 16 (Eastern)

Noting Acts 2:1, 4, 11 **“And when the day of Pentecost was fully come...they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance...the wonderful works of God”** this site<sup>116</sup> states **Whitsun** (also **Whitsunday** or **Whit Sunday**) is the name used in Britain and Northern Ireland, and throughout the world among Catholic, Anglicans and Methodists, for the Christian festival of Pentecost. It is the seventh Sunday after Easter\*, which commemorates the descent of the Holy Spirit upon Christ’s disciples (Acts 2). \*An estimate follows.

<b>Whitsun Estimate 2023 date</b>	28 May [from April 9] 4 June [from April 16]
-----------------------------------	---

## Conclusion with Caveat

The foregoing estimate notwithstanding note Matthew 24:44, Luke 12:40  
**“Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh...Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.”**

## Captain Siegfried Sassoon at the Somme

### Introduction

July 2016 marked the 100<sup>th</sup> anniversary of the opening of the battle of the Somme in northern France in WW1 on July 1<sup>st</sup> 1916<sup>117</sup>. Lieutenant later Captain Siegfried Sassoon<sup>118</sup> was a British Army officer who served in that battle and survived. This work aims to both help commemorate the centenary of the battle and to draw lessons from the life and experiences of Captain Sassoon as a testimony to Lamentations 3:22-23 **“It is of the LORD’S mercies that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not. They are new every morning: great is thy faithfulness.”**

### Besetting Sin

It should be understood that Sassoon was caught in a besetting sin for much of his life. The Wikipedia and this site<sup>119</sup> reveal it. Paul therefore admonishes today’s believer **“Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds. Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin”** Hebrews 12:1-4.



Siegfried Sassoon (May 1915)

It was the Lord Jesus Christ that **“resisted unto blood, striving against sin.”** Therefore today’s believer can plead **“the blood of Christ”** against any sin and overcome it<sup>120</sup> insofar as **“How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?”** Hebrews 9:14 **“and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin”** 1 John 1:7.

## Biography

Captain Siegfried Sassoon, 1886-1967, served in France in WW1 with the Royal Welch Fusiliers at the Somme and at Arras and later in Palestine, after which he returned to France, where he was wounded and sent home to convalesce some months before the armistice. He is well known as one of the most forthright and articulate writers of the war – and against the war. He lodged a written protest against the war with his commanding officer in July 1917, as a result of which he was committed to a hospital for war neuroses cases in Craiglockhart, Edinburgh.

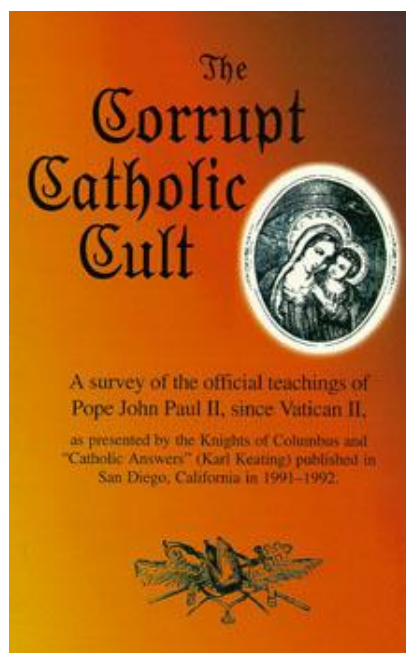
Sassoon describes his early life and his war experiences in his semi-autobiographical work *The Complete Memoirs of George Sherston*<sup>121</sup>. Catholic nun Dame Felicitas Corrigan describes his later life and eventual conversion to Christianity, though in a Catholic environment, in 1957<sup>122</sup> in her book *Siegfried Sassoon: Poet's Pilgrimage*<sup>123</sup>.

Dame Felicitas was instrumental in Sassoon getting saved but this work is not an endorsement of the corrupt cult of Catholicism<sup>124</sup>. It is an account of how one man got saved and what may be learned from his salvation and before it. Sassoon became a Catholic after his conversion but he is not misled by the corrupt Catholic cult any longer *nor by his besetting sin* in that he now stands among **"...the spirits of just men made perfect"** Hebrews 12:23.

The Poem Hunter site<sup>125</sup> lists Sassoon's poems<sup>126</sup> with these biographical details.

*Siegfried Sassoon was perhaps the most innocent of the war poets. John Hil-debidle has called Sassoon the "accidental hero." Born into a wealthy Jewish family in 1886, Sassoon lived the pastoral life of a young squire: fox-hunting, playing cricket, golfing and writing romantic verses.*

*Being an innocent, Sassoon's reaction to the realities of the war were all the more bitter and violent - both his reaction through his poetry and his reaction on the battlefield (where, after the death of fellow officer David Thomas and his brother Hamo at Gallipoli, Sassoon earned the nickname "Mad Jack" for his near-suicidal exploits against the German lines - in the early manifestation*



*of his grief, when he still believed that the Germans were entirely to blame)...Sassoon also showed his innocence by going public with his protest against the war (as he grew to see that insensitive political leadership was the greater enemy than the Germans). Luckily, his friend and fellow poet Robert Graves convinced the review board that Sassoon was suffering from shell-shock and he was sent instead to the military hospital at Craiglockhart where he met and influenced Wilfred Owen.*

*Sassoon is a key figure in the study of the poetry of the Great War: he brought with him to the war the idyllic pastoral background; he began by writing war poetry reminiscent of Rupert Brooke; he mingled with such war poets as Robert Graves and Edmund Blunden; he spoke out publicly against the war (and yet returned to it); he influenced and mentored the then unknown Wilfred Owen; he spent thirty years reflecting on the war through his memoirs; and at last he found peace in his religious faith... “my development has been entirely consistent and in character” [Sassoon said], “...I am a religious poet.”*

This was true of him even as an unsaved man as these poems reveal. See the following citations together with the attached study **The Redeemer**.

## Religious Poetry

Sassoon had a sense of Paul's testimony *in principle* according to "my...manner of life" 2 Timothy 3:10. Today's believer should have an equivalent testimony to have "plentifully declared the thing as it is..." Job 26:3 and "Provide things honest in the sight of all men" Romans 12:17. "I say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost" Romans 9:1.

### Table Testimony to Sassoon's testimony "...I am a religious poet"<sup>127</sup>

<i>Villon</i> Pre-War	<i>At Carnoy</i> July 3 <sup>rd</sup> , 1916	<i>Autumn</i> circa 1917
They threw me from the gates: my matted hair Was dank with dungeon wetness; my spent frame O'erlaid with marish agues: everywhere Tortured by leaping pangs of frost and flame, So hideous was I that even Lazarus there In noisome rags arrayed and leprous shame, Beside me set had seemed full sweet and fair, And looked on me with loathing.	Down in the hollow there's the whole Brigade Camped in four groups: through twilight falling slow I hear a sound of mouth- organs, ill-played, And murmur of voices, gruff, confused, and low. Crouched among thistle- tufts I've watched the glow Of a blurred orange sunset flare and fade; And I'm content. To-morrow we must go To take some cursèd Wood ... O world God made!	October's bellowing anger breaks and cleaves The bronzed battalions of the stricken wood In whose lament I hear a voice that grieves For battle's fruitless har- vest, and the feud Of outraged men. Their lives are like the leaves Scattered in flocks of ruin, tossed and blown Along the westerling fur- nace flaring red. O martyred youth and manhood overthrown, The burden of your wrongs is on my head.
But one came Who laid a cloak on me and brought me in Tenderly to an hostel quiet and clean; Used me with healing hands for all my needs. The mortal stain of my re- puted sin, My state despised, and my defilèd weeds, He hath put by as though they had not been.		



In sum “...if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world” 1 John 2:1-2. The overview of Sassoon at the Somme follows.

### ***Sassoon’s Somme Ordeal***

Based on Extracts from a Talk Transcript

Writer’s note: Prepared for and delivered during a magnificent Holt’s Tour<sup>128</sup> of the Somme in about 1984, courtesy of Major and Mrs Holt’s invitation. I seem to recall it went down fairly well. A few up-to-date annotations are inserted in braces [] or as numbered endnotes. A final section has been added.

### ***Sassoon – Introduction***

Many here may be familiar with Siegfried Sassoon’s writings. For those not familiar with his writings, I trust I can whet some appetites [and prepare the ground for further scriptural lessons that may be drawn from Sassoon’s life and experiences].

### ***Sassoon – the Man***

- In many ways he was a typical young English sportsman and gentleman, like multitudes who flocked enthusiastically to the colours in 1914.
- But being part-Jewish, he was endowed with great gifts (like most Jews) including the ability to express himself vividly and forcibly.
- To visualise Sassoon, consider the characterisation of the athlete Harold Abrahams [by actor Ben Cross<sup>129</sup>] in the film *Chariots of Fire*<sup>130</sup>. To me, they seem very similar, physically and mentally.

### ***Sassoon – the Soldier***

- He served with the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, the Royal Welch Fusiliers, opposite [the village of] Fricourt on July 1<sup>st</sup> 1916. [His battalion was part of the elite 7<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, a Regular division which had seen service in France since 1914<sup>131</sup>.]
- Before the battle, he had earned the nickname MAD JACK for his daring exploits, for which he was awarded the MC, Military Cross<sup>132</sup>. [The Wikipedia article on Sassoon states *On 27 July 1916 he was awarded the Military Cross; the citation read:*

2<sup>nd</sup> Lt. Siegfried Lorraine [sic] [Lorraine] Sassoon, 3rd (attd. 1<sup>st</sup>) Bn., R. W. Fus.

*For conspicuous gallantry during a raid on the enemy's trenches. He remained for 1½ hours under rifle and bomb fire collecting and bringing in our wounded. Owing to his courage and determination all the killed and wounded were brought in]*

- He saw the battle from a support trench that he termed *our opera box* and recorded the day's events in a diary that he transcribed into his memoirs<sup>133</sup> with the comments *A small shiny black notebook contains my pencilled particulars. It will do no good embellishing them with afterthoughts. I cannot turn my field glasses on the past...Fricourt half-hidden by clouds of drifting smoke, blue, pinkish and grey. Shrapnel bursting in bluish-white puffs with tiny flashes. The birds seem bewildered; a lark begins to go up and then flies feebly along, thinking better of it. Others flutter above the trench with querulous cries, weak on the wing...There were about forty casualties on the left (from the machine-gun in Fricourt). Through my glasses I could see one man moving his left arm up and down as he lay on his side; his face is a crimson patch. Others lay still in the sunlight...*
- [Sassoon could clearly bring the reader up sharp with the horror of the war but he possessed extraordinary sensitivity to the tragedy of the war.] We visited the Devon and Gordon Cemetery. Sassoon was in that area in July 1916 as his battalion moved into an area known as The Quadrilateral. This is what he wrote<sup>134</sup>.

*[At] ...the first of many halts...I saw, arranged by the roadside, about fifty of the British dead. Many of them were Gordon Highlanders. There were Devons and South Staffordshires among them, but they were beyond regimental rivalry now – their fingers mingled in blood-stained bunches, as though acknowledging the companionship of death. There was much battle gear lying about, and some dead horses. There were rags and shreds of clothing, boots riddled and torn, and when we came to the old German front-line, a sour pervasive stench which differed from anything my nostrils had known before...I wanted to say that I had seen "the horrors of war;" and here they were, nearly three days old...*

Sassoon penned his earliest anti-war poem from this experience [thinking of those at home].

***The Road***<sup>135</sup>

(from *Collected Poems, The Old Huntsman*)

*The road is thronged with women; soldiers pass  
And halt, but never see them; yet they're here –  
A patient crowd along the sodden grass,  
Silent, worn out with waiting, sick with fear.  
The road goes crawling up a long hillside,  
All ruts and stones and sludge, and the emptied dregs  
Of battle thrown in heaps. Here where they died  
Are stretched big-bellied horses with stiff legs,  
And dead men, bloody-fingered from the fight,  
Stare up at caverned darkness winking white...*

- During the Somme battle he captured a German trench single-handed in broad daylight. The Germans in it had beaten off a surprise attack by an entire battalion the previous night. A single lunatic named Sassoon was too much for them!
- That same day, Sassoon led a successful bombing i.e. grenade-throwing counter attack against the Prussian Guard, Germany's elite<sup>136</sup>. [Sassoon's cricketing background obviously stood him in good stead with respect to grenade-throwing.]
- Later that day, he was reprimanded by his commanding officer, Colonel Stockwell, for not informing Stockwell of his whereabouts and activities. One day in the [then precarious] life of 'Mad Jack' Sassoon. Robert Graves<sup>137</sup> writes *Siegfried distinguished himself by taking, single-handed, a battalion frontage which the Royal Irish Regiment had failed to take the day before. He went over with bombs in daylight, under covering fire from a couple of rifles, and scared away the occupants [but] instead of signalling for reinforcements, he sat down in the German trench and began reading a book of poems which he had brought with him. When he finally went back he did not even report. Colonel Stockwell, then in command, raged at him. The attack on Mametz Wood had been delayed two hours because British patrols were still reported to be out. 'British patrols' were Siegfried and his book of poems.*

Dame Felicitas adds<sup>138</sup> *He dwelt alone...among throngs of men in the Gehenna of the Somme. When 'Mad Jack' captured a German trench with little more than a wave of his hand, his immediate reaction was to sit down somewhere, fish in his pocket, bring out a book of poems, and forget all about the Germans on the run. The gas and flames of diabolical warfare*

*could not blast or consume his tree of life. "I'd have got you a D.S.O. if you'd only shown more sense," the CO said<sup>139</sup>.*

[Sassoon's ordeal on the Somme ended abruptly on July 23<sup>rd</sup> 1916 when he was evacuated suffering severe trench fever and remained in England convalescing for the rest of the year<sup>140</sup>]

### ***Sassoon – the Protester***

[Sassoon returned to France in February 1917 but was evacuated to England a second time in April after having been wounded in the battle of Arras<sup>141</sup>. Soon afterwards, he wrote his protest against the war that he forwarded to his CO<sup>142</sup>, outcome of which action was that he was sent to Craiglockart War Hospital in Edinburgh. See ***Biography***. Though post-Somme this aspect of Sassoon's life and experiences together with those alluded to in remarks on Sassoon's survival and salvation, see what follows, are directly connected to Sassoon's Somme ordeal and the scriptural lessons prompted by his life and experiences. Sassoon had this to say of his time at Craiglockhart War Hospital<sup>143</sup>, no doubt drawing upon what he had seen and endured during all his time at the front. He thereby gives another example for today's believer to have **"plentifully declared the thing as it is..."** Job 26:3 and **"Provide things honest in the sight of all men"** Romans 12:17.]

*By night...the hospital became sepulchral and oppressive with saturation of war experience. One lay awake and listened to feet padding along passages which smelt of stale cigarette-smoke; for nurses couldn't prevent insomnia-ridden officers from smoking half the night in their bedrooms, though the locks had been removed from all doors. One became conscious that the place was full of men whose slumbers were morbid and terrifying – men muttering uneasily or suddenly crying out in their sleep. Around me was that underworld of dreams haunted by submerged memories of warfare and its intolerable shocks and self-lacerating failures to achieve the impossible...*

*By night each man was back in his own horror-stricken Front Line, where the panic and stampede of some ghastly experience was re-enacted among the livid faces of the dead. No doctor could save him then, when he became the lonely victim of his dream disasters and delusions.*

*Shell-shock. How many a brief bombardment had its long-delayed after-effect in the minds of these survivors, many of whom had looked at their companions and laughed while inferno did its best to destroy them. Not then was their evil hour, but now; now, in the sweating suffocation of nightmare, in paralysis of limbs, in the stammering of disconnected speech...they, who in the name of righteousness had been sent out to maim and slaughter their fellow-man. In*

*the name of civilization, these soldiers had been martyred, and it remained for civilization to prove that their martyrdom wasn't a dirty swindle.*

### **Sassoon – the Survivor**

- His protest availed nothing, so he went back to fight. He described his decision to do so as follows<sup>144</sup>. *I visualized an endless column of marching soldiers, singing “Tipperary” on their way up from the back areas; I saw them filing silently along ruined roads, and lugging their bad boots through mud until they came to some shell-hole and pillar-box line in a landscape where the trees were all stumps and skeletons and no Quartermaster on earth could be certain of getting the rations up... “From sunlight to the sunless land” ...The idea of going back there was indeed like death...[but] going back to the War as soon as possible was my only chance of peace.*
- In July 1918, he was shot in the head but survived and was sent to hospital, to be repatriated to England. (Three successive Julys of the war were significant for Sassoon; July 1916, at the Somme, July 1917, his Declaration against the war, July 1918, wounded and sent home.) He described his repatriation as follows<sup>145</sup>, mostly peaceful, though it included some parting horror from the war [and a sense of what is now called Survivor Guilt<sup>146</sup>].

*‘We’ll be sending you across to England in a few days,’ murmurs the nurse while she is dabbing at my head. She says it quite naturally, as if it were the only possible thing that could happen...Then I listen to the chatter of the other wounded officers in this room, talking about people being blown to bits. And I remember a man at the C.C.S. [Casualty Clearing Station]...He lay with one hand groping at the bandages which covered his whole head and face, gurgling every time he breathed...The War had gagged him – smashed him – and other people looked at him and tried to forget what they’d seen...All this I remember, while the desirable things of life, like living phantoms, steal quietly into my brain... ‘to England in a few days’...And though it’s wrong, I know I shall go there, because it is made so easy for me.’*

### **Sassoon in Sum – Man, Soldier, Protester**

His besetting sin notwithstanding, see **Besetting Sin**, Siegfried Sassoon the carefree, rustic young man tempered to steely soldierliness by *the Gehenna of the Somme* that provoked him to protest for peace according to Psalm 120:7 **“I am for peace: but when I speak, they are for war”** against those that **“had the power of death”** Hebrews 2:14 over him thereby furnishes *even as an unsaved*

man a challenging role model for today's believer according to 2 Samuel 10:12 **"Be of good courage, and let us play the men for our people, and for the cities of our God; and the LORD do that which seemeth him good."**

*Sassoon – the Saved Man* [section added to the original talk]

Dame Felicitas discusses Sassoon's conversion to Christianity in some detail in her book. But the following references<sup>147</sup> are for this writer among the most significant.

*S.S.'s Diary 6 March 1954: 'Stayed in bed and read Part 1 of The Pilgrim's Progress. It is for all time, I think, in spite of its similitudes being outmoded. Its humanity will survive its being condemned by modern psychologists. It remains alive.' Note: Re-reading it in 1964, I found that in '54 I had understood nothing at all of the Gospel doctrine which pervades it. I read it with new eyes.*

From the last stanza of *A Prayer in Old Age* 23 September 1964

*I ask one world of everlasting loss  
In all I am, that other world to win.  
My nothingness must kneel below Thy Cross.  
There let new life begin.*

That stanza stands well with Paul's doctrinal statement on *new life* that brings to a head the major lessons to be drawn from the life and experiences of Captain Siegfried Loraine Sassoon who even as an unsaved man **"plentifully declared the thing as it is..."** Job 26:3 and did **"Provide things honest in the sight of all men"** Romans 12:17 after the manner of Paul himself according to Romans 9:1 **"I say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost"** fulfilling in principle 2 Samuel 10:12 **"Be of good courage, and let us play the men for our people, and for the cities of our God; and the LORD do that which seemeth him good."**

**"Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new"** 2 Corinthians 5:17.

In spite of his Catholicism Sassoon always did rejoice in that transformation as today's believer should *because Sassoon had assurance of salvation as today's believer should in accordance with Paul's testimony.*

**"...for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day"** 2 Timothy 1:12 **"In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel"** Romans 2:16.



In those things therefore and as an admonition to today's believer, the life and experiences of Captain Siegfried Sassoon<sup>148</sup> are as indicated, see *Introduction*, a vivid testimony to Lamentations 3:22-23 ***"It is of the LORD'S mercies that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not. They are new every morning: great is thy faithfulness."***



**Psalms 117:2 KJV**

***For his merciful kindness is great toward us: and the truth of the LORD endureth for ever. Praise ye the LORD.***

## The Redeemer<sup>149</sup>

by Siegfried Sassoon

Darkness: the rain sluiced down; the mire was deep;  
 It was past twelve on a mid-winter night,  
 When peaceful folk in beds lay snug asleep;  
 There, with much work to do before the light,  
 We lugged our clay-sucked boots as best we might  
 Along the trench; sometimes a bullet sang,  
 And droning shells burst with a hollow bang;  
 We were soaked, chilled and wretched, every one;  
 Darkness; the distant wink of a huge gun.

I turned in the black ditch, loathing the storm;  
 A rocket fizzed and burned with blanching flare,  
 And lit the face of what had been a form  
 Floundering in murk. He stood before me there;  
 I say that He was Christ; stiff in the glare,  
 And leaning forward from His burdening task,  
 Both arms supporting it; His eyes on mine  
 Stared from the woeful head that seemed a mask  
 Of mortal pain in Hell's unholy shine.

No thorny crown, only a woollen cap  
 He wore — an English soldier, white and strong,  
 Who loved his time like any simple chap,  
 Good days of work and sport and homely song;  
 Now he has learned that nights are very long,  
 And dawn a watching of the windowed sky.  
 But to the end, unjudging, he'll endure  
 Horror and pain, not discontent to die  
 That Lancaster on Lune may stand secure.

He faced me, reeling in his weariness,  
 Shouldering his load of planks, so hard to bear.  
 I say that He was Christ, who wrought to bless  
 All groping things with freedom bright as air,  
 And with His mercy washed and made them fair.  
 Then the flame sank, and all grew black as pitch,  
 While we began to struggle along the ditch...

### **The Redeemer – Explanatory Note**

The above WW1 poem depicts how men are in this life. Occasionally they may get a glimpse of the Redeemer when a faithful follower of His bears witness to Him. Unlike the men in the poem lit briefly by *Hell's unholy shine* they can turn to ***“the light of the glorious gospel of Christ”*** 2 Corinthians 4:4 but all too often they don't and continue to flounder in pitch black darkness until they go to ***“A land of darkness, as darkness itself; and of the shadow of death, without any order, and where the light is as darkness”*** Job 10:22.

The last two lines of the poem have been omitted because they take the Lord's name in vain.

Nevertheless the imagery of the poem makes clear that today's believer is himself to be ***“as unto a light that shineth in a dark place...”*** 2 Peter 1:19 steadfastly making known the Lord Jesus Christ ***“In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins”*** Colossians 1:14<sup>150</sup>.



2tim215truth.com

**"But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed."**

Isaiah 53:5 KJV

## Cobbers

*Writer's Note:* The Lord said ***"I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee"*** Hebrews 13:5. These three illustrations from history depict the Lord's compassion upon ***"them that are his"*** 2 Timothy 2:19.

**'Don't forget me cobber' Fromelles July 19<sup>th</sup>-20<sup>th</sup> 1916**<sup>151</sup>

*Prominent in his efforts to save the wounded was Sergeant Simon Fraser, 57th Battalion, of Byaduk, Victoria. In a letter, a lengthy extract of which Charles Bean quoted in his official history, Fraser described something of the process of bringing in the wounded in the face of the enemy at Fromelles...It was no easy task picking up and carrying a man on one's back particularly if he had a serious wound or a broken limb...*



*Fraser wrote of one man 'I could not lift him on my back; but I managed to get him into an old trench and told him to lie quiet while I got a stretcher. Then another man...sang out **'Don't forget me cobber'**. I went in and got four volunteers with stretchers and we got both men in safely.'*

*Fraser, later promoted to the rank of Lieutenant was killed in action at Bullecourt on 11 May 1917 with the 58th Battalion.*

*The bravery of those who went out to rescue the wounded of Fromelles is commemorated at the Australian Memorial Park. In the middle of the Park is a statue, sculpted by Peter Corlett of Melbourne, and was erected in 1998. It depicts Sergeant Simon Fraser with a wounded man of the 60th Battalion on his shoulders, carrying him to safety and the work is appropriately entitled 'Cobbers'.*

***"Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? yea, they may forget, yet will I not forget thee"*** Isaiah 49:15.

## Group Hug

Today's believer should therefore abide by 1 Thessalonians 5:11 ***“Wherefore comfort yourselves together, and edify one another, even as also ye do”*** noting that group hugs are good:

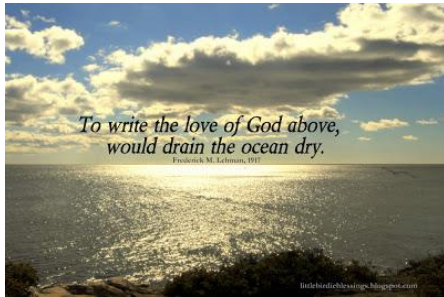


Wounded Ed Tipper is comforted by his friend Joe Liebgott<sup>152</sup>  
*Band of Brothers* Episode 3 Carentan, 1 minute 50 seconds in

***“Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort; Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God”*** 2 Corinthians 1:3-4.



## The Love of God<sup>153</sup>



*Could we with ink the ocean fill,  
And were the skies of parchment made,  
Were every stalk on earth a quill,  
And every man a scribe by trade,  
To write the love of God above,  
Would drain the ocean dry.  
Nor could the scroll contain the whole,  
Though stretched from sky to sky.*

One day, during short intervals of inattention to our work, we picked up a scrap of paper and, seated upon an empty lemon box pushed against the wall, with a stub pencil, added the (first) two stanzas and chorus of the song... Since the lines (3<sup>rd</sup> stanza from the Jewish poem) had been found [pencilled] on the wall of a patient's room in an insane asylum after he had been carried to his grave, the general opinion was that this inmate had written the epic in moments of sanity.

- Frederick M. Lehman, History of the Song, *The Love of God*, 1948<sup>154</sup>.

***“For whether we be beside ourselves, it is to God...”*** 2 Corinthians 5:13<sup>155</sup>.

*Here is love, vast as the ocean,  
Lovingkindness as the flood,  
When the Prince of Life, our Ransom,  
Shed for us His precious blood.  
Who His love will not remember?  
Who can cease to sing His praise?  
He can never be forgotten,  
Throughout Heav'n's eternal days.*

*On the mount of crucifixion,  
Fountains opened deep and wide;  
Through the floodgates of God's mercy  
Flowed a vast and gracious tide.  
Grace and love, like mighty rivers,  
Poured incessant from above,  
And Heav'n's peace and perfect justice  
Kissed a guilty world in love.*

*So here is love, vast as the ocean,  
Lovingkindness as the flood,  
When the Prince of Life, our Ransom,  
Shed for us His precious blood.*



*Who His love will not remember?  
Who can cease to sing His praise?  
He can never be forgotten,  
Throughout Heav'n's eternal days.*

*Grace and love, like mighty rivers,  
Poured incessant from above,  
And Heav'n's peace and perfect justice  
Kissed a guilty world in love.*



### **John 6:51 KJV**

***I am the living bread which came down from  
heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall  
live for ever: and the bread that I will give is my  
flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.***

## **SATAN THE DEVIL**

***“...your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:” 1 Peter 5:8***



***“Someone in the trench said, “THE DEVIL’S COMING!””***

– German soldier, September 15<sup>th</sup> 1916 the battle of the Somme

### **Introduction – “The Devil’s Coming!”**

Tanks were first used in action at the battle of the Somme<sup>156</sup> on September 15<sup>th</sup> 1916, by the British against the Germans. A German soldier spoke of his shock at the sight of the metal monsters.

*“One stared and stared as if one had lost the power of one’s limbs. The monsters approached, slowly, hobbling, rolling and swaying but they approached. Nothing impeded them. A supernatural force seemed to impel them on. Someone in the trench said, “The Devil’s coming!” and the word was passed along the line like wildfire.”*

Only Satan the Devil was terrible enough for these men to voice their fear. They were not wrong. God says of the Devil in Job 41:9 ***“shall not one be cast down even at the sight of him?”*** Yes, one would be. So the Christian should know about the Devil as Paul warns in 2 Corinthians 2:11 ***“Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.”*** The answers to some key questions should help believers not to be ignorant of Satan and his devices.

## The Devil – Who is He?

Satan the Devil is the Christian's main enemy as 1 Peter 5:8 calls him **"your adversary the devil:"** Satan is the Devil as Revelation 12:9 says **"And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan."** Those terms reveal the Devil as he is now<sup>157</sup>. He is **"the great dragon," "a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads"** Revelation 12:3. He is **"that old serpent"** of Genesis 3:1 and **"leviathan"** of Job 41:1-34 **"a king over all the children of pride"** and so he has **"seven crowns upon his heads."** That's why 'gay pride'<sup>158</sup> is among **"the works of the devil"** 1 John 3:8. Isaiah 27:1 says he is **"leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent...the dragon that is in the sea," "the sea" being "the waters...above the firmament"** Genesis 1:7. **"The sea"** is Satan's main domain now, though he isn't confined there. Satan was **"Lucifer, son of the morning"** Isaiah 14:12 and **"the anointed cherub...perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee...therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God"** God said in Ezekiel 28:14-16 and He did.

The Devil is a *created* being but *not* a fallen angel, he's a cast-out cherub, so only four cherubs are around the throne in Ezekiel 1:10, Revelation 4:6-7. The fifth cherub representing the aquatic and reptile creatures is missing. That's Lucifer. Ezekiel 1:10, 10:14 show that the essential face of a cherub is that of an ox, so the Devil is shown with split hooves, horns and a serpentine tail.

2 Corinthians 11:14 warns however that **"Satan...is transformed into an angel of light"**, having been Lucifer, *Lux-fero* or light bearer. Eve was not **"cast down...at the sight of him"** in Genesis 3:2 because she didn't see him as he really is. Only **"the holy scriptures"** 2 Timothy 3:15 do.

## The Devil – What Does He Do?

**"The devil...deceiveth the whole world"** Revelation 12:9. He does so by *questioning* what God said, subtly *changing* what God said and luring the deceived **"taken captive by him at his will"** 2 Timothy 2:26 to *doubt* and then depart from what God said so that **"they that are unlearned and unstable wrest...the...scriptures, unto their own destruction"** 2 Peter 3:16.

Genesis 3:1 states **"the serpent...said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?"** The question is pitched with a positive **"Yea"** contrary to God's ten-fold negative **"Thou shalt not"** Exodus 20:4, 5, 7, 10, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17 in the Ten Commandments against **"wicked ways"** and **"corrupt doings"** Ezekiel 20:44 and as though doubting God is itself **"to be desired to make one wise"** Genesis 3:6 instead of damnable because doubt **"is not of faith"** Romans 14:23. The Devil then says

**“Ye”** plural instead of **“thou”** singular which is what God *actually* said because **“the man and his wife...shall be one flesh”** Genesis 2:24-25.

Genesis 3:2-3 show that **“the woman being deceived was in the transgression”** 1 Timothy 2:14. She used the plural **“We”** and **“Ye”** showing the Devil had driven a wedge between her and her husband that ends in a separation between man and God Who **“drove out the man...from the garden of Eden”** Genesis 3:23-24. The modern feminist<sup>159</sup> movement, **“sin in the flesh”** Romans 8:3 and the **“many, which corrupt the word of God”** 2 Corinthians 2:17 all start in Genesis 3:1-3 and all are satanic. The purpose of the Devil's deceit is death. He achieved it in Eden.

That is why Paul states **“Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned”** Romans 5:12.

### **The Devil – What is His Fate?**

**“...the devil...was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone...and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever”** Revelation 20:10. **“Amen; Alleluia”** Revelation 19:4.

### **The Devil – What Can Defeat Him?**

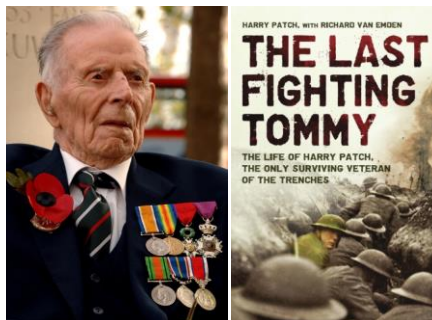
James 4:7 states **“Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.”** Submission to God means submission to all that God said. *Refusal* to submit to God led to defeat in Eden but *willingness* to submit to God gained the Lord *victory over the Devil in the wilderness*. **“And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God”** Luke 4:4. Luke 4:13 warns **“And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season”** but the Lord drove him off that time and He did each time. So can the Christian. The reason is that the Devil must do what God tells him.

Note Job 1:12, 2:7 **“So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD”** and the contexts where Satan is permitted to afflict Job. He does exactly what God tells him and no more. Noting that the Devil is **“a king over all the children of pride”** Job 41:34, note Psalm 105:14-15 **“He suffered no man to do them wrong: yea, he reproveth kings for their sakes; Saying, Touch not mine anointed, and do my prophets no harm.”** Every Christian is God's anointed. **“Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God”** 2 Corinthians 1:21. The Devil must still obey the command **“Touch not mine anointed.”** Use it, and defeat the Devil.

## Flanders Fields 1917 and God's Son



**Flanders  
Poppy**



**Harry Patch 1898-2009**



***“Narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life” Matthew 7:14***

### ***Flanders Fields and God's Son***

What is termed Flanders Fields<sup>160</sup> is part of the northwest corner of Belgium that borders on the North Sea. It is a roughly semi-circular area of gradually rising ground of 5-6 miles radius east of the town of Ypres, the main town in the area. Flanders was fought over for most of WW1 but it is the major battle fought between July and November 1917 that is best known. That battle is called Passchendaele, named after a village on the easternmost edge of Flanders Fields and on the crest of the rising ground called Passchendaele Ridge. Passchendaele was the final objective of the battle and it was captured in early November 1917. Each yard of ground gained during the battle cost Britain and her Allies 30 men.

Just as the Flanders poppy is a reminder of that battle and of the Great War, it should be noted that God's Son, our Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ, endured experiences that the Passchendaele battle grimly illustrates. That should always be part of our Remembrance.

### **Last Survivor**

Mr Harry Patch was Britain's last surviving WW1 trench veteran<sup>161</sup>. The book *The Last Fighting Tommy* is his biography. He died in 2009 aged 111. He served in Flanders Fields from June to September 1917 in the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry<sup>162</sup>. Mr Patch said that he never forgot his three comrades-in-arms who were killed on September 22<sup>nd</sup> 1917, in the same shell burst by which he was wounded and knocked out of the war. Mr Patch said therefore that September 22<sup>nd</sup> was his Remembrance Day. The Lord's words "**in remembrance of me**" occur 3 times in scripture; Luke 22:19, 1 Corinthians 11:24, 25 with respect to *His* wounds *and* death. Each and every day should be a remembrance of that.

**"Known unto God"** Acts 15:18, Philippians 4:6

Because they were unidentified, many men who died in WW1 are only remembered by their headstone that reads: *A Soldier of the Great War, Known Unto God*. The words *Known Unto God* are from a 1611 Authorised King James Holy Bible. That Book shows that Jesus was *never* unidentified but *always* "**known unto God.**" "**As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father**" John 10:15. Be sure the Father knoweth *you*.

### **A Terrible Enemy**

Remember that the Lord faced a terrible enemy. The Flanders battle showed just how terrible an enemy can be. At dawn on October 9<sup>th</sup> 1917<sup>163</sup>, about 90 Australians under the command of 22 year-old Lieutenant Frank Scott raided German positions in a strongly-defended sector called Celtic Wood. Lieutenant Scott and his men were severely shelled, outnumbered, cut off from support, dogged by knee-deep mud and engaged in fierce hand-to-hand fighting. 48 men were listed as unwounded, wounded or killed in action including Lieutenant Scott. Heavy shelling removed all trace of the remaining 37 men. The survivors had been through a horrific ordeal, face-to-face with a terrible enemy on all sides. So it was with the Lord. "**The assembly of the wicked have inclosed me: they pierced my hands and my feet...thou hast brought me into the dust of death**" Psalm 22:15-16.

Note: **“Thou”** is God because Jesus said **“not my will but thine, be done”** Luke 22:42 for you and I. Never forget that.

### ***Personal Recollections and God’s Promise***

Like Harry Patch, other Flanders survivors<sup>164, 165</sup> endured things like those Jesus went through.

Corporal Joseph Pincombe, on a place like hell:

*Everywhere, as far as you could see, there were spurts of earth from shells bursting ...going off like geysers shooting up in the air. As far as you could see...there was nothing but mud, mud, mud for miles and just a few stumps of trees here and there and all hell let loose around you. The Lord went to hell for you and I. **“Out of the belly of hell cried I, and thou heardest my voice”** Jonah 2:2 but **“when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared”** Hebrews 5:7, now **“he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him”** Hebrews 7:25. Never forget that.*

Private Richard Mercer, on the means of movement, vital but exposed, see figure:

*“We used to walk along these wooden duckboards...The Germans would concentrate on these things [but] You just did not want to go off the duckboards.” So true. **“Narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life”** Matthew 7:14 but **“the fiery darts of the wicked”** Ephesians 6:16 will fall yet Jesus said **“I am the way”** John 14:6 so don’t stray off the way.*

Private Reginald Le Brun, a Canadian machine gunner, on being alone:

*They pushed the machine guns right out in front. There was nothing between us and the Germans across the swamp. Three times during the night they shelled us heavily...By morning, of our team of six, only my buddy Private Tombes and I were left. Then came the burst that got Tombes...It was a terrible feeling to be the only one left. Jesus knew that. **“And they all forsook him, and fled”** Mark 14:50. Yet the Lord said **“I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee”** Hebrews 13:5. ***That promise is the best part of remembrance.****



**1918 and God's Deliverance**  
***"When the enemy shall come in like a flood"***  
 Isaiah 59:19



**Poison Gas Casualties, April 1918<sup>166</sup>**

### **The Enemy in Flood**

In early 1918, the Western Front was grim. ***"The enemy...in...flood"*** would make it worse. On March 21<sup>st</sup> 1918, the German Army attacked the British Army near the town of Amiens in northern France. The Germans fired over a million shells, broke through the British first and second lines and caused massive casualties. Many men were gassed. See figure.

### **The Standard of the LORD**

But some units were able to fight back, including the 2<sup>nd</sup> Battalion the Green Howards, the Yorkshire Regiment, near the town of St Quentin. They resisted seven separate attacks on March 21<sup>st</sup>. Their CO was 25 year-old Captain Herbert Read<sup>167</sup>, a yeoman farmer's son from Kirbymoorside in the then North Riding of Yorkshire. He described what happened.

*We fired like maniacs. Every round of ammunition had been distributed. The [machine] guns jammed; rifle bolts grew stiff and unworkable*

*with the expansion of heat...In the height of this attack, while my heart was heavy with anxiety, I received a message from brigade. Surely reinforcements were coming to our aid? Or was I at length given permission to withdraw? Neither. [We were] to hold on to the last man.*

Providentially, the Green Howards were later ordered to fall back, which they did. Events in July 1918 showed that they had benefitted from Isaiah 59:19. **“When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the LORD shall lift up a standard against him.”** God enabled the Green Howards to stand hard, literally. He was to do so with other defenders.

The Germans’ advance in March stalled and was halted but in April 1918 they attacked again, in Flanders, with many veteran units transferred to the Western Front after the collapse of Russia. They got a surprise, as military historian Captain Cyril Falls<sup>168</sup> explains.

*[The German] assault was smashed with heavy loss...At times the Germans fought brilliantly, but...the majority of the divisions from Russia had never faced the British, and found them unexpectedly tough. Yet the majority of the British troops were only shadows of the old army; [reinforcement] drafts largely consisting of lads between 18½ and 19 years of age, half-trained, immature, weakly led at the lowest level...[but] it must be said that these lads, many of them none too well fed before enlistment, gave a good account of themselves. That was God’s doing. **“God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty”** 1 Corinthians 1:27. The Germans attacked yet again in July against the British Army near Béthune and God intervened again as this eye-witness account reveals about the incident of *The White Cavalry*<sup>169</sup>.*

## **The White Cavalry**

*The following account of what occurred [in July], 1918, I (Captain Cecil...Hayward) can personally vouch for it as being true...I was responsible for the intelligence on this sector of the battle area...The whole British nation was called to prayer. The President of the United States summoned the American people to do likewise...*

God was already at work as the earlier repulses of the enemy showed. **“And it shall come to pass, that before they call, I will answer; and while they are yet speaking, I will hear”** Isaiah 65:24. God answered prayer in July 1918. **“The Spirit of the LORD”** Isaiah 59:19 again

stemmed **“the enemy...in...flood.”** Captain Hayward observed the following.

*Enemy shell fire, which had been largely directed against the shattered town of Béthune, suddenly lifted and began to burst on a slight rise beyond its outskirts. This open ground was absolutely bare...yet the enemy gunfire broke on it with increasing fury, and was augmented by heavy bursts of masses of machine guns...We stood looking in astonishment.*

*“Fritz has gone balmy, Sir,” said [my] Sergeant, “what in the world is he peppering the naked ground for?”*

Then, suddenly, the Germans broke and ran. Captain Hayward states:

*That...seemingly victorious army broke up into groups of frightened [fleeing] men...It was not long before my Sergeant arrived with two German officer prisoners...*

Captain Hayward took the following statement from the senior of the two German officers.

*“The order had been given to advance...when Friedrich my lieutenant here said:*

*““Herr, Kapitan, just look at that open ground behind Béthune, there is a brigade of cavalry coming up through the smoke drifting across it...[but] they are all in white uniform and are mounted on white horses.”*

*“We saw the shells bursting amongst the horses and their riders...our machine guns opened a heavy fire...But they came quietly forward...not a single man or horse fell...*

*“Then a great fear fell on me, and I turned to flee, yes I, an officer of the Prussian Guard fled, panic-stricken, and around me were hundreds of terrified men...all running...That is all I have to tell you...The German Army is broken...We are beaten, by the White Cavalry.”*

On November 11<sup>th</sup> 1918, a little over 3 months later, the Great War ended. For Britain, the USA and their allies **“the LORD saved them by a great deliverance”** 1 Chronicles 11:14.

### **A Solemn Warning**

Note again the wording of Isaiah 59:19 **“When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the LORD shall lift up a standard against him.”** Most of the new versions *change both the wording and the meaning.* That kind of desecration will turn *deliverance* into *damnation*.

This is God speaking. **“For ye have perverted the words of the living God...Therefore, behold, I, even I, will utterly forget you...and cast you out of my presence”** Jeremiah 23:36, 39. Note well that **“The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times”** Psalm 12:6. They are not to be trifled with. **“Take ye good heed unto yourselves therefore”** Deuteronomy 2:4, noting further<sup>170</sup>:



### Deuteronomy 4:9 KJV

*Only take heed to thyself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou forget the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons;*

## STALINGRAD – WHY GOD HAD FORSAKEN THEM

*“My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?  
why art thou so far from helping me...” Psalm 22:1*



**Panzergrenadiers of 16 Wehrmacht Panzer Division, preparing to attack towards the banks of the Volga at Stalingrad November 1942**

### **Stalingrad – An Overview**<sup>171, 172</sup>

*The German offensive to capture Stalingrad began in late summer 1942 using the 6th Army and elements of the 4th Panzer Army. The attack was supported by intensive Luftwaffe bombing that reduced much of the city to rubble. The fighting degenerated into building-to-building fighting, and both sides poured reinforcements into the city. By mid-November 1942, the Germans had pushed the Soviet defenders back at great cost into narrow zones generally along the west bank of the Volga River<sup>173</sup>.*

*On 19 November 1942, the Red Army launched Operation Uranus, a two-pronged attack targeting the weaker Romanian and Hungarian forces protecting the German 6th Army's flanks...The Axis forces on the flanks were overrun and the 6th Army was cut off and surrounded in the Stalingrad area. Adolf Hitler ordered that the army stay in Stalingrad and make no attempt to break out; instead, attempts were made to supply the army by air and to break the encirclement from the outside. Heavy fighting continued for another two months. By the beginning of February 1943, the Axis forces in Stalingrad had*

*exhausted their ammunition and food. The remaining elements of the 6th Army surrendered...The battle lasted five months, one week, and three days.*

At the time of the Red Army's counter offensive Operation Uranus, both sides had over a million men committed to the battle. By the time of the Axis surrender, the Red Army had suffered over a million casualties with Soviet civilian deaths up to 40,000 and the Axis forces 850,000 including 90,000-110,000 survivors taken prisoner. Of these, only 5,000-6,000 ever returned from captivity.

The fighting at Stalingrad was harrowing in the extreme for both sides, as one German officer recorded. It is not known if he survived the battle or the subsequent captivity if he did. The above figures indicate that the odds were against it. As the Psalmist lamented ***"My heart is sore pained within me: and the terrors of death are fallen upon me"*** Psalm 55:4.

***'My God, why have you forsaken us?'***<sup>174</sup>

### ***October 1942***

*'My God, why have you forsaken us?'* wrote a lieutenant of the XXIV Panzer Division... *'Stalingrad is no longer a town. By day it is an enormous cloud of burning, blinding smoke; it is a vast furnace lit by the reflection of the flames. And when night arrives, one of those scorching, howling, bleeding nights, the dogs plunge into the Volga and swim desperately to gain the other bank. The nights of Stalingrad are a terror for them. Animals flee this hell; the hardest stones cannot bear it for long; only men endure.'*

The lieutenant has described a scene that is as near to a picture of hell as secular literature is likely to provide. The scripture says this about hell. Note that no-one condemned there will ever get out.

***"And the streams thereof shall be turned into pitch, and the dust thereof into brimstone, and the land thereof shall become burning pitch. It shall not be quenched night nor day; the smoke thereof shall go up for ever: from generation to generation it shall lie waste; none shall pass through it for ever and ever"*** Isaiah 34:9-10.

The hell of the autumn battles at Stalingrad turned inexorably to the freezing hell of winter where the suffering of the invaders was intensified by the remorseless Russian counter-offensive as these accounts of individual ordeals reveal. They in effect summarise the last and worst phase of the battle before the German surrender and underscore the lieutenant's lament above that God had indeed forsaken the German 6<sup>th</sup> Army at Stalingrad.



The men became like lost men in hell as Job typified *“And now my soul is poured out upon me; the days of affliction have taken hold upon me. My bones are pierced in me in the night season: and my sinews take no rest...I cry unto thee, and thou dost not hear me: I stand up, and thou regardest me not. Thou art become cruel to me: with thy strong hand thou opposest thyself against me”* Job 30:20-21.

Why the German Army at Stalingrad became an army forsaken by God Himself, like lost men in hell, will be addressed subsequently.

### **Individual Ordeals**<sup>175</sup>

#### **January 1943**

*There were thirty-three wounded, the last of the casualties from a collecting point south of Gumrak...And there stood the plane, that is to say their last chance of safety. It is easy to understand how the men who wanted to get away crowded around the door, pushing and shoving. The machine had room for sixteen men and when these were on board a further eight were pushed in after them and yet there were still nine left shivering in the cold. Inside they crowded together, lay on the floor, squatted on their heels, clung to the struts and supports, and literally lay on top of each other, and still six more waited outside. To get these six on board they threw out the stretchers and the canisters and the emergency lighting. They took away men's greatcoats, uncovering wounds into which you could put a fist, they crawled into the pilot's compartment, filled the rear gun turret, and still there were three to come. They threw the ammunition out of the door and the bandages and dressings and another man was added to the human cargo, which now filled the machine to the roof. It was not only the smallness of the landing field, but also the weight of the load which made the pilot doubt whether he would be able to get his machine off the ground. The pilot could not get out of his seat and no one else could climb on board. Inside the door, which would not shut, the last but one sat on top of three friends, and even if the paint had been scraped from the walls and the door taken off its hinges and the wireless apparatus sent the way of the ammunition there would still not have been room for another. The snow around the machine had been flattened by the crowd and on that flattened snow across which the icy wind whistled lay the thirty-third man, shot through both knees.*

*...can you understand what it means to a man of twenty-two to be given another chance to live? Can you imagine, or remember, what it is like not to have washed for weeks, to have eaten nothing save scraps of stale bread, raw roots, to have drunk only melted snow, to have lived under a constant hail of fire with the thermometer at thirty-five degrees centigrade below zero, and with no hope*



*of ever coming out alive? If you can imagine that, then perhaps...you will be able to appreciate the heroic self-sacrifice of the lance-corporal from Iserlohn. He had been standing just inside the door of the plane. Now he jumped out and walked across to the man who was to be left behind. He said to him: "Both my arms are broken, chum, but you can't even walk." And then a couple of the others climbed out, and they lifted him up and passed him in over the heads and shoulders of the rest and went back to their cramped quarters in the machine...The machine was so full that they had to hook a belt through the door-handle, and two men held it, for it could not be closed.*

*How the pilot managed to take off is a mystery. There was not a foot of runway to spare, but he made it, a remarkable feat on the part of the transport pilot who sat behind the controls.*

*A single, lonely soldier lay against a heap of snow on Gumrak airfield, the collars of his two overcoats turned up and two scarves knotted about his face. He had a fur cap on his head and he gazed after the departing plane. There is no other case of an aircraft circling to salute a single soldier. The pilot has said that he never saw a more lonely man than this lance-corporal sitting in the snow at map reference 426, his head raised, staring into the sky. The only patch of colour was the brown congealed blood that had seeped through the bandages about his arms. He could not have waved to the plane that dipped its wings in his honour, even if he had wished to do so.*

### **January 1943**

*The tank had lost its tracks, but the hatches still closed and the gun and its machine guns could still be fired. Five men sat in this tank, which they had made as comfortable as possible for themselves. The tank had broken down in the front line, and had earlier been used by a Regimental Commander as his headquarters. That was why a telephone line linked it with division. The Commander of the regiment had gone, and his troops too, but the five men who belonged to a neighbouring regiment had moved in.*

*'Until Judgment Day.'*

*They tried out the machine gun and it worked, they swung the gun and rammed a shell into the breech, and it went off with a bang. They found the telephone, and turned the handle and they were in contact with division. They hung up, and remained there for a whole week without being spotted by the enemy. Then the Russians advanced. The five soldiers let them come within fifty yards, and aimed at the middle of them. After that they were left alone for twenty-four hours. Next day tanks arrived and things became more difficult. They fired point-blank and knocked out three T34's. That evening they 'phoned through*

*a 'battle report' to Division. The German front line was over a mile behind them and the Russians attacked with mortars and artillery and finally once again with tanks. The complete story of their solitary battle would fill a book, but the end can be quickly told. The ammunition for the machine guns gave out first. Then they scraped the last crumbs from the bottom of their coat pockets, turned the handle of the telephone and asked what they should now do. No help could be sent them, but they got the answer:*

*'Remember the Russians in the silo.'*

*And this is the story of the Russians in the silo:*

*The 71<sup>st</sup> Infantry Division had encircled a grain store, defended by Soviet soldiers. After three days the defenders had radioed to their command post in the 'Tennis Racquet':*

*'We've nothing more to eat.'*

*The reply came: 'Fight, and you'll forget about being hungry.'*

*After three days they radioed again: 'We've nothing more to drink. What shall we do?' and the reply came back:*

*'The time has come, comrades, for you to live on your wits and your ammunition.'*

*The defenders waited for two days and then sent their last message:*

*'We've no more ammunition.'*

*Within five minutes, they received the reply:*

*'The Soviet Union thanks you, your lives have had a purpose.'*

*The five soldiers in the tank remembered this as their last shell blew an anti-tank gun into the air at four hundred yards. They were now helpless against flame-throwers. When the sun went down there was no report from Position 506. Nor did Germany thank them, and nobody assured them that their lives had had a purpose.*

### **January 1943**

*Dr. Ludwig had given his services as a priest without stint, had administered extreme unction, had heard the last messages of the dying and had detached that half of the identity discs which was supposed to be delivered to the dead man's next of kin, though he had the gravest doubts whether they would ever reach their destination...*

*The padre was engaged in a hopeless attempt to deal with death as a mass phenomenon. He could no longer concern himself with individuals, but was forced to perform his duties almost as a drill. The extreme unction, the Lord's Prayer, the next man; for 30,000 dead lay in Gumrak.*

*There was a special room at the main dressing station for those with stomach or head wounds and the hopeless cases would be taken straight from the operating tent 'to the padre'. The stretcher bearers brought him a man whose face had already been covered with a shroud. The priest pulled back the covering, administered the last rites, for the hundredth time that day, and repeated the Lord's Prayer. When he had reached the end of the Catholic version, he saw the hands under the shroud clasp one another and heard the 'dead man' add the Protestant ending: 'for Thine is the kingdom, the power and the glory'.*

Those sobering accounts illustrate that the best that men can do cannot avert God's judgement when He has determined that it should fall and men are helpless when it does fall as Zephaniah shows. ***"And I will bring distress upon men, that they shall walk like blind men, because they have sinned against the LORD: and their blood shall be poured out as dust, and their flesh as the dung"*** Zephaniah 1:17.

It may be of course that in an individual case like the 'dead man' ***"mercy rejoiceth against judgment"*** James 2:13, even at Stalingrad. The statement 'for Thine is the kingdom, the power and the glory' being the words of a dying man is a good testimony to Matthew 6:13 as it stands in the 1611 Holy Bible. See the attached study for detailed witnesses<sup>176</sup> to the words ***"For thine is the Kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen."***

However, the Germans who made it back to Germany from Stalingrad no doubt by means of ***"the mercies of God"*** Romans 12:1 had great unease.

### **The Deepest Chill**

*Those Germans who managed to return from Stalingrad alive often go back there in their dreams and memories...When their thoughts return to that city which lies between the steppe and the Volga, the past is resurrected. They hear again the harsh clangour of war, the stirring beat of the drum. They recall once more cruel anguish, numbed brains, unknown terrors, comrades dying, the blind fury of the guns and the horizon which they themselves forged from steel and flame. And the cold that then grips at their hearts is a deeper chill than any even to be encountered at Stalingrad.*

God had forsaken them at Stalingrad. In part they could understand as God had said to David ***"But the word of the LORD came to me, saying, Thou hast shed blood abundantly, and hast made great wars...thou hast shed much***

**blood upon the earth in my sight”** 1 Chronicles 22:8 but how had it really come about? Could it happen again? Those questions are now addressed.

### **Why God Forsakes Men**

The reason that God forsakes men is found with Israel<sup>177</sup>, whose leaders declared ***“We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement”*** Isaiah 28:15 and ***“...Away with him, away with him, crucify him... We have no king but Caesar”*** John 19:15.

Thus came to pass what God said through Ezekiel with respect to Israel.

***“And the heathen shall know that the house of Israel went into captivity for their iniquity: because they trespassed against me, therefore hid I my face from them, and gave them into the hand of their enemies: so fell they all by the sword”*** Ezekiel 39:23.

God’s judgement fell on Israel because Israel’s leaders forsook Him. God therefore forsook Israel as Ezekiel 39:23 describes. A similar judgement can fall upon any nation that forsakes God, as the Psalmist reveals.

***“The heathen are sunk down in the pit that they made: in the net which they hid is their own foot taken. The LORD is known by the judgment which he executeth: the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands. Higgaion. Selah. The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God”*** Psalm 9:15-17.

This is how it happened for Germany in the first half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. It has to do with Germany’s ***“covenant with death, and with hell”*** via a satanic intermediary ***“a man whom I appointed to utter destruction”*** 1 Kings 20:42. Thus the 6<sup>th</sup> Army found itself forsaken by God at Stalingrad.

## Judgement on Germany

Edmond Paris<sup>178</sup> documents in detail Hitler's rise to power masterminded by the Jesuits. Paris shows that Hitler was indeed for Germany a satanic intermediary ***“a man whom I appointed to utter destruction”*** 1 Kings 20:42.

Paris cites various authors whose statements are given in quotes.

*At that time [1923], Monseigneur Pacelli, future Pius XII and the Curia's best diplomat, is Nuncio [papal ambassador] in Munich, capital of Catholic Bavaria...cradle of nazism. There, the star of the future German dictator starts to rise; he is a Catholic, like his most important associates...*

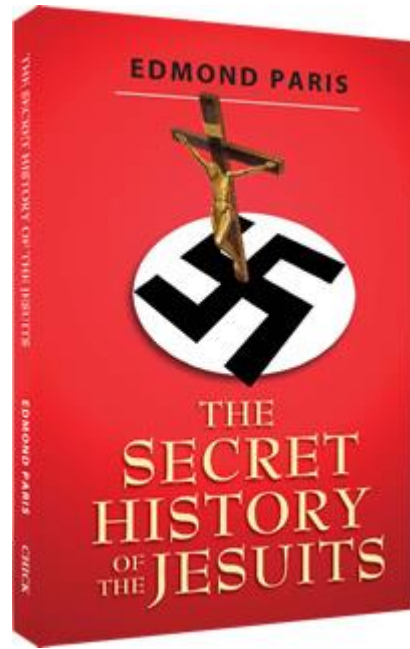
*“It is easy to guess what kind of special care the Vatican gives Bavaria where Hitler's National-Socialism recruits its strongest contingents”...*

*To take from “heretic” [Protestant] Prussia the control of the German “secular arm” and transfer it to Catholic Bavaria; what a dream! Monseigneur Pacelli puts all his power to realise it, acting in concert with the chief of the Company of Jesus [the Jesuits].*

*“After the other war (1914-1918), the Jesuits' general, Halke von Ledochowski, had conceived a vast plan...a federation of the Catholic nations in central and eastern Europe: Austria, Slovakia, Bohemia, Poland, Hungary, Croatia and, of course, Bavaria.*

*“This new central Empire had to fight on two fronts: on the eastern side against the Soviet Union, on the western side against Prussia, Protestant Great-Britain and republican, rebellious France. At that time, Monseigneur Pacelli, future Pius XII, was nuncio in Munich, then in Berlin, and an intimate friend of Cardinal Faulhaber, von Ledochowski's main collaborator. The Ledochowski plan was the dream of Pius XII's youth”...*

*But was it only a dream of youth? The “Mittel-Europa” Hitler tried to organise was very similar to that plan, apart from the presence, in that block, of Lutheran Prussia, a not very dangerous minority... In fact, it was the*



*Ledochowski plan, adapted to the needs of the time, which the Fuhrer was trying to realise, under the patronage of the Holy See, with the help of Franz von Papen, secret chamberlain of the pope, and the nuncio to Munich, then Berlin, Monseigneur Pacelli.*

*...the choice of Germany's "regenerators" will [therefore] fall upon Hitler, who is destined to triumph over the "democratic mistakes" under the Holy Father's standard. Of course, he is a Catholic, like his principal collaborators...*

*The "Mercure de France" gave an excellent study in 1934:*

*"In the beginning of 1932, German Catholics...had been told that "the Pope was personally in favour of Hitler".*

*"That Pius XI was sympathetic to Hitler should not surprise us... For him, Europe could settle down again only through Germany's hegemony... The Vatican had thought of changing the centre of gravity of the Reich, through the Anschluss [union with Catholic Austria], for a long time, and the Company of Jesus was openly working towards that aim (Ledochowski's plan), especially in Austria. We know how Pius XI depended on Austria to make what he called his politics triumph. What had to be prevented was the hegemony of Protestant Prussia and, as the Reich was the one to dominate Europe...a Reich had to be rebuilt where the Catholics would be masters...*

*"In March 1933, the German bishops, meeting at Fulda, took advantage of the speech Hitler gave at Potsdam to declare: "We must admit that the highest representative of the government of the Reich, who is at the same time the head of the national-socialist movement, has made public and solemn declarations, by which the inviolability of the Catholic doctrine, the work and unchangeable rights of the Church are recognised..." Von Papen leaves for Rome. This man, whose past is so wicked<sup>179</sup>, becomes a pious pilgrim with the mission to conclude a Concordat (for the whole of Germany) with the Pope. He too will have to emulate Mussolini's overtures towards the Vatican"...*

*In fact, the same happens in both countries: in Italy, the Catholic party of don Sturzo ensures Mussolini's accession to power; in Germany, the "Zentrum" of Monseigneur Kaas does the same for Hitler – and on both occasions, a Concordat seals the pact.*

*M. Joseph Rovin admits this as follows: "Thanks to von Papen, deputy at the Zentrum since 1920 and owner of the party's official publication 'Germania', Hitler came to power on the 30<sup>th</sup> of January 1933... German political Catholicism, instead of becoming Christian Democrat, was eventually made to confer full powers on Hitler, on 26<sup>th</sup> of March 1933... To vote in favour of full powers,*

*a two-thirds majority was necessary and the votes of the “Zentrum” were indispensable to obtain it”... The same author adds: “In the correspondence and declarations of ecclesiastical dignitaries, we always find, under the nazi regime, the fervent approval of the bishops”...*

Ex-Jesuit priest the Late Dr Alberto Rivera<sup>180</sup> said this: *In the prophetic works of the Book of Revelation, Edmond Paris became a martyr for Jesus. In exposing such a conspiracy, he put his life at stake for truth of the prophetic signs to be known. Edmond Paris never knew me, but I knew him without meeting him personally when I, with other Jesuits under the extreme oath and induction, was being briefed on the names of institutions and individuals in Europe who were dangerous to the goals of the Roman Catholic Institution. His name was given to us.*

Germany’s leaders, like Israel’s before her, had given in to Caesar, John 19:15 and in turn to ***“the great whore...MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH”*** Revelation 17:1, 5, the Catholic Church of whom the scripture says ***“Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her”*** Revelation 18:8.

Part of that judgement is a Catholic *west to east* departure from God like Cain and like Stalingrad:

### **God’s East-West Direction for Blessing**

It should be noted that the design of European abbeys, cathedrals, minsters, including York Minster, Salisbury Cathedral and Westminster Abbey is such that entry is *west to east*, the *opposite* of God’s direction for blessing, as will be shown. It is no coincidence, therefore, that nominal European Christianity i.e. Catholicism has been ***“against God”*** for the last 1500 years or more<sup>181</sup>.

Rome is in particular *and will be until the Second Advent* a ***“sin against God”*** Genesis 39:9, a ***“spirit against God”*** Job 15:13, a ***“hand against God”*** Job 15:25, ***“words against God”*** Job 34:37, a ***“fight against God”*** Acts 23:9, ***“enmity against God”*** Romans 8:7 and ***“blasphemy against God”*** Revelation 13:6. Revelation 13:6 describes the popes, especially the *last pope*, the final antichrist<sup>182</sup>.

***“And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.”***

Salisbury Cathedral, in Wiltshire, southwest England, pictured, is typical. It is a magnificent building but, as seen from the layout, it’s all wrong. The photo

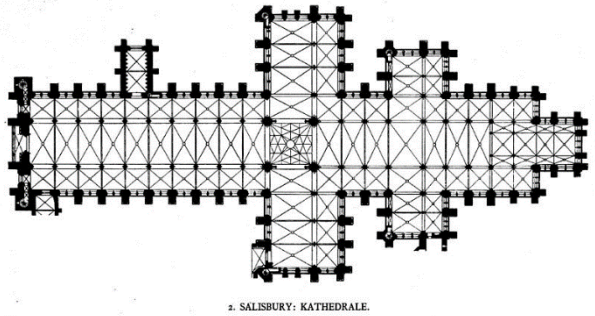


is the *eastern* aspect, showing the east window that is meant to be towards the sun. As seen from the plan drawing, the building is entered from the *west*, called *the west front*. Thanks to the 16<sup>th</sup> century English Protestant Reformation, the cathedrals etc. are now all Church of England, not Catholic but the departure from the 1611 Holy Bible is gradually pulling the C of E back into line with Rome<sup>183</sup>.



Salisbury Cathedral from the east  
1220-1380

An essay in Early English Gothic with  
the tallest spire in England



2. SALISBURY: KATHEDRALE.

The plan shows double transepts with  
aisles and extended east end. (The  
layout is west to east, left to right.)

The papists excused their layout of the cathedrals as follows, from the Wiki article, this writer's emphases but their excuse doesn't affect the scripture. It just shows the Devil's subtlety, Genesis 3:1 "***Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made.***"

*As described above, the majority of cathedrals and great churches are cruciform in shape with the church having a defined axis. The axis is generally east/west with external emphasis upon **the west front, normally the main entrance**, and internal emphasis upon the eastern end so that the congregation faces the direction of the coming of Christ\*. Because it is also the direction of **the rising sun**, the architectural features of the east end often focus on enhancing interior illumination by the sun\*\*. Not every church or cathedral maintains a strict east/west axis, but even in those that do not, the terms **East End** and **West Front** are used. Many churches of Rome, notably St Peter's Basilica, face the opposite direction\*\*\*.*

\*Which 'Christ' though? See Ezekiel 28:14 "***Thou art the anointed cherub.***"

\*\*"***Take heed therefore that the light which is in thee be not darkness***" Luke 11:35.

\*\*\*Rome will never get right, even when facing the right way, Revelation 19:1, 2, 3.

The Lord's east-west movements include<sup>184</sup>:

- That of the sun typifying the Lord Jesus Christ, Psalm 19:4-6, Micah 5:2, Malachi 4:2.
- God's calling to Abraham to go west, Genesis 12:6.
- Jacob's return westwards, Genesis 32-35.
- The entry into the Tabernacle, Numbers 3:38.
- The entry of the nation of Israel into the then land of Canaan, Numbers 19-25.
- The return of the Jews from captivity, Ezra-Nehemiah.
- The coming of "*wise men from the east*" Matthew 2:1.
- The entry of the Lord Jesus Christ into Jerusalem at His Return, Ezekiel 44:1, 2.

The spread of the Gospel, according to Acts 1:8, goes east to west in church history, from the land of Israel to the British isles "*and unto the uttermost part of the earth,*" the Devil being forced to follow with papal persecutions of true believers<sup>185</sup>. Note that:

- When God drove Adam and Eve out of Eden, they went *west to east*, Genesis 3:24.
- When Cain left God's presence, he went *west to east*, Genesis 4:16.
- When Jacob fled from Esau, he went *west to east*, Genesis 27:43, 28:5.
- When David fled from Absalom, he went *west to east*, 2 Samuel 15:14, 23.
- When the Jews went into captivity, they went *west to east*, Jeremiah 52:26, 27, 28, 29, 30.

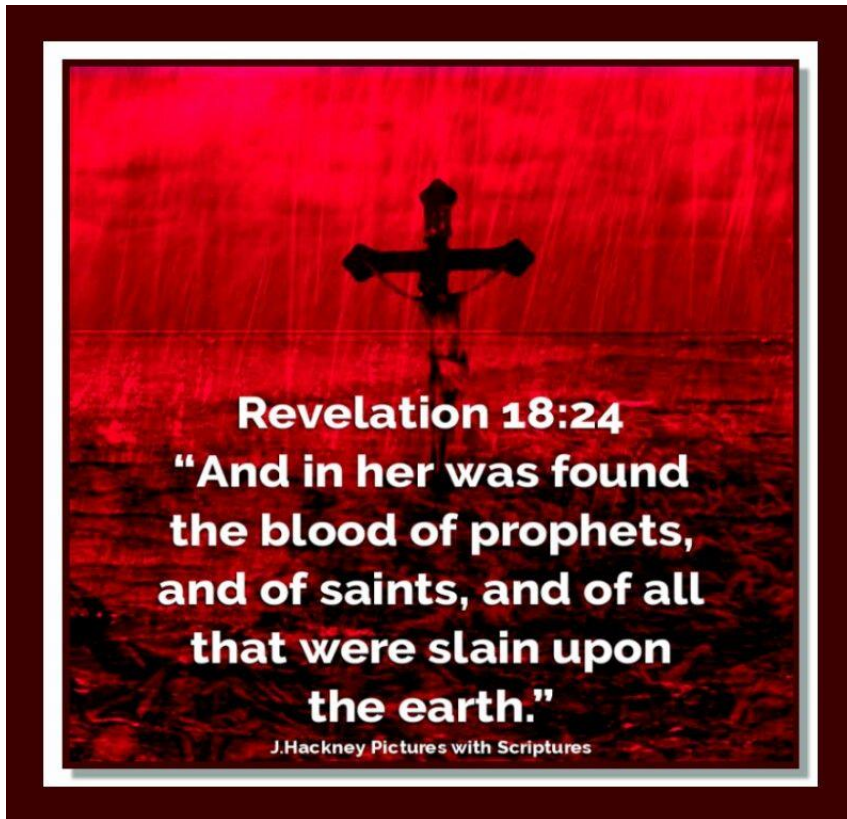
Note also Ezekiel 8:16, with respect to eastwards worship that is idolatrous worship undertaken by men who had turned their backs on God.

***"And he brought me into the inner court of the LORD'S house, and, behold, at the door of the temple of the LORD, between the porch and the altar, were about five and twenty men, with their backs toward the temple of the LORD, and their faces toward the east; and they worshipped the sun toward the east."***

Ezekiel 8:16 is the only time in scripture when worship is said to be "*toward the east.*" Worshippers in European abbeys, cathedrals, minsters, including York Minster, Salisbury Cathedral and Westminster Abbey have always "*worshipped...toward the east.*"

***“They that be wise”** Daniel 12:3, therefore, will obey Revelation 18:4, including separation from the Romish counterfeit modern ‘bibles’ that repeatedly depart from the 1611 Holy Bible in order to line up with Rome’s official Catholic Bibles; Douay Rheims, Jerusalem and New Jerusalem Bibles and the Romish New World Translation of the Watchtower cult; NIV, TNIV, ESV, NASV, NRSV, NKJV etc. with which are among Rome’s **“ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH”** Revelation 17:5 by which in large part **“the great whore...did corrupt the earth with her fornication”** Revelation 19:2. See Dr Mrs Gail Riplinger’s work<sup>186</sup> for detailed insights into the Romish counterfeit modern ‘bibles.’ In conclusion **“They that be wise”** will carefully note Revelation 18:8 and context<sup>187</sup>.*

***“Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.”***



## Could It happen Again?

Yes, for the same reason it happened to Israel and to Germany, for any nation, church or individual capitulating to ***“have no king but Caesar”*** John 19:15 and in turn capitulating to ***“the great whore...MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH”*** Revelation 17:1, 5, the Catholic Church.

Then follows the judgement of God as ***“Hanani the seer”*** 2 Chronicles 16:7 warned King Asa, who was by then ***“an old and foolish king, who will no more be admonished”*** Ecclesiastes 4:13.

***“For the eyes of the LORD run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to shew himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward him. Herein thou hast done foolishly: therefore from henceforth thou shalt have wars. Then Asa was wroth with the seer, and put him in a prison house; for he was in a rage with him because of this thing...”*** 2 Chronicles 16:9-10.

Bob Jones Sr rightly said<sup>188</sup> War is God's judgment on sin here, and Hell is God's judgment on sin hereafter. That is the Biblical position.

***“The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God”*** Psalm 9:17 by apostatising to Caesar i.e. Rome, John 19:15.

***“And I myself will fight against you with an outstretched hand and with a strong arm, even in anger, and in fury, and in great wrath”*** Jeremiah 21:5 as at Stalingrad for the German 6<sup>th</sup> Army.

The position of today's believer is nevertheless clear, as Paul exhorts Timothy, being assured of ***“the goodness of God”*** Romans 2:4 ***“to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen”*** 2 Timothy 4:18. ***“Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine...watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry”*** 2 Timothy 4:2, 5.

## Matthew 6:13

***“For thine is the Kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen”*** by the RV, Ne, ESV, NIV, NKJV f.n., JB, NJB, NWT. The DR omits all but the word ***“Amen.”***

Fuller<sup>189</sup> citing Burgon, states that of more than 500 relevant (Greek) manuscripts, all but nine contain the AV1611 reading. Hills<sup>190</sup> states that uncials B, Aleph, D, Z and 6 cursives omit the words, together with 9 manuscripts of the Old Latin and all of Jerome's Vulgate. See also Will Kinney's article<sup>191</sup>. The TBS<sup>192</sup> have an extremely detailed compilation on this text as follows:

Evidence for the authenticity of the AV1611 reading:

1<sup>st</sup> Century: 2 Timothy 4:18b (cross reference)

2<sup>nd</sup> Century: Didache (document of Apostolic Teaching, discovered 1875<sup>193</sup>), Tatian's Diatessaron, Old Syriac version (Peshitta)

3<sup>rd</sup> Century: Coptic and Sahidic (i.e. Egyptian) versions

4<sup>th</sup> Century: Apostolic Constitutions, Old Latin manuscript k, Gothic (Ulfilas<sup>194</sup>) and Armenian versions

5<sup>th</sup> Century: Uncial W, Chrysostom, Isidore of Pelusium<sup>195</sup>, Georgian version

6<sup>th</sup> Century: Uncials Sigma, Phi; Ethiopic version; Palestinian, Harkelian (Harclean) and Curetonian Syriac<sup>196</sup>

8<sup>th</sup> Century: Uncials E, L

9<sup>th</sup> Century: Uncials G, K, M, U, V, Delta, Phi, Pi; Old Latin f, g; Cursives 33, 565, 892

10<sup>th</sup> Century: Cursive 1079

11<sup>th</sup> Century: Cursives 28, 124, 174, 230, 700, 788, 1216

12<sup>th</sup> Century: Cursives 346, 543, 1010, 1071, 1195, 1230, 1241, 1365, 1646

13<sup>th</sup> Century: Cursives 13, 1009, 1242, 1546

14<sup>th</sup> Century: Cursives 2148, 2174

15<sup>th</sup> Century: Cursives 69, 1253.

The TBS states that the majority of the *very numerous* Byzantine copies, including lectionaries, contain the AV1611 reading. The evidence against the AV1611 reading is as follows:

2<sup>nd</sup> Century: Cyprian, Origen, Tertullian, who all fail to mention the words - as do later writers listed below.

3<sup>rd</sup> Century: Some Coptic manuscripts

4<sup>th</sup> Century: Aleph, B, Old Latin a, Caesarius Nazarene, Cyril of Jerusalem, Gregory Nyssa, Hilary

5<sup>th</sup> Century: Uncial D, Old Latin b, h; Chromatius, Augustine

6<sup>th</sup> Century: Uncial Z, Cursive 0170

7<sup>th</sup> Century: Old Latin l

9<sup>th</sup> Century: Old Latin g2

10<sup>th</sup>-11<sup>th</sup> Centuries: Old Latin ff.

12<sup>th</sup>-13<sup>th</sup> Centuries: Cursive 1, 118, Lectionary 547, Old Latin c

14<sup>th</sup>-15<sup>th</sup> Centuries: Cursives 131, 209, 17, 130.

AV1611 support for Matthew 6:13 is clearly overwhelming.

## **D-Day, Normandy June 6<sup>th</sup> 1944 and God's Conquest**

***"Go now ye that are men, and serve the LORD;  
for that ye did desire"*** Exodus 10:11



**Sword Beach<sup>197</sup> - 07:25 a.m. June 6<sup>th</sup> 1944**  
**Lord Lovat, CO of 1<sup>st</sup> Special Service Brigade,**  
**on the right of the column, wades through the water.**  
**In the foreground is Piper Bill Millin**

### **D-Day, Normandy, God's Conquest**

This study largely addresses the British effort on D-Day. However, one horrific incident that happened in the American sector of the Normandy invasion will serve to show why D-Day, Normandy was truly *God's* conquest and that it is as well that victory in Normandy was achieved. D-Day consisted of both airborne and seaborne assaults, in that order. Historian Cornelius Ryan describes how in the American sector, to the west of the British and Canadian sector, some paratroopers of the 505<sup>th</sup> Parachute Infantry Regiment of the 82<sup>nd</sup> US Airborne Division landed in the town of Ste. Mère-Eglise. The Germans quickly overwhelmed



them but Ryan notes that Lieutenant-Colonel William E. Eckman<sup>198</sup>, commanding officer of the 505<sup>th</sup>, reported that *one of the chaplains of the regiment...who dropped in Ste. Mère-Eglise was captured and executed within minutes.*

That is what happens under dictators. That is what will happen before the Lord's Return<sup>199</sup> as Paul warns ***"that in the last days perilous times shall come"*** 2 Timothy 3:1 ***"and no man is sure of life"*** Job 24:22 as Job prophesies. The men of D-Day kept that peril at bay for 75+ years but that was what it was like in Hitler's Europe in WW2.

### **D-Day, Normandy, Breaking Hitler's Yoke**

Historian Chester Wilmot<sup>200</sup> writes that *In the summer of 1942 four hundred million people in Europe lay under the yoke of German rule. In June 1944, the yoke for Western Europe was about to be broken, by D-Day Normandy and God's conquest. **"But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ"** 1 Corinthians 15:57.*

### **D-Day Invaders, "God-going men"**

The British Deputy Chaplain-General, the Rev. Canon F. Llewellyn Hughes<sup>201</sup>, said this about the men who would bring about ***"the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ."*** *'Indeed, most of the men are not regular church-going men; but they are God-going men, and they have their picture of the King of kings in the sanctuary of their hearts.'* That is where the King should be.

**"For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ"** 2 Corinthians 4:6.

### **C-in-C Commander-in-Chief's Decision**

Cornelius Ryan<sup>202</sup> describes how on June 4<sup>th</sup> 1944, the C-in-C, US General Eisenhower with his senior commanders reviewed the weather forecast, *a barely tolerable period of fair conditions...would prevail for just a little more than twenty-four hours for June 5<sup>th</sup>-6<sup>th</sup>.* Eisenhower then made his decision. *Tuesday, June 6, would be D-Day.* This was God's decision. **"For the LORD of hosts hath purposed, and who shall disannul it? and his hand is stretched out, and who shall turn it back?"** Isaiah 14:27. Not Hitler.

## Key Objectives for 6<sup>th</sup> Airborne Division, the Men of the Red Beret

The British effort for D-Day began on the night of June 5<sup>th</sup> with the 6<sup>th</sup> Airborne Division. Wilmot<sup>203</sup> describes 6<sup>th</sup> Airborne's vital tasks, including *that of seizing and holding the left flank of the bridgehead* where key objectives were the bridges across the Caen Canal and the Orne River. Glider-borne troops of 2<sup>nd</sup> Battalion, the Oxford and Buckinghamshire Light Infantry<sup>204</sup>, commanded by Major John Howard, would capture the bridges. In one glider heading for the Caen Canal was 19 year-old Private Bill Gray. Ryan<sup>205</sup> states *Private Bill Gray, a Bren gunner...closed his eyes and braced himself for the crash...there was a splintering, rending crash...the glider screeched across the ground throwing up a hail of sparks [and] smashed to a halt...Someone yelled "Come on, lads!"...everybody stormed the bridge...Stunned by the swift-ness of the assault, the Germans were overwhelmed.* The glider troops dug in to hold the bridges. **"Occupy till I come"** Luke 19:13 the Lord says.

## 'Hobo's Funnies,' Beach Assaults' Armoured Spearhead

The specialised 79<sup>th</sup> Armoured Division<sup>206</sup>, known as '*Hobo's Funnies*' after their commander, Major-General Sir P. C. S. Hobart, led the British and Canadian beach assaults. Its regiments included AVREs, Armoured Vehicles Royal Engineers, Churchill tanks modified to carry equipment for crossing obstacles and a 'Petard,' a device firing 40-lb explosive charges to shatter concrete gun emplacements. They would assault the beaches at 0730 hours, the British being designated Sword and Gold. Isaiah described this battle. ***"Every battle of the warrior is with confused noise...but this shall be with burning and fuel of fire"*** Isaiah 9:5, that is, *God's conquest via internal combustion engines.*

## Sword Beach, Skirl of the Pipes and the Men of the Green Beret

Landing at Sword Beach were commandos of 1<sup>st</sup> Special Service Brigade, led by Lord Lovat, Chief of Clan Fraser. According to Ryan<sup>207</sup>, *As...Lord Lovat's piper, William Millin [see picture]...floundered towards the shore, Lovat shouted at him, "Give us 'Highland Laddie,' man!" Waist deep in the water, Millin put the mouthpiece to his lips and splashed on through the surf, the pipes keening crazily.* Lovat's men were to relieve Major Howard's men, who had been beating off repeated counter-attacks. In the early afternoon, Bill Gray and his friend Private John Wilkes heard bagpipes. Ryan states *Down the road came Lord Lovat's commandos...Bill Millin marched at the head of the*

column, his pipes blaring out “Blue Bonnets over the Border”...Disregarding the heavy German fire, the [6<sup>th</sup> Airborne] troopers rushed out to greet the commandos...As the red and green berets intermingled, there was a sudden, perceptible lightening of spirits. Nineteen-year-old Bill Gray felt “years younger.” In God’s conquest **“thy youth is renewed like the eagle’s”** Psalm 103:5.

### Gold Beach, Advancing AVREs and Infantry

Historian R. W. Thompson<sup>208</sup> states *The AVREs...fought their way with infantry across the beaches in the face of intense [enemy fire]...petard tanks supporting the infantry blasted the coastal crust of strongpoints with their giant mortars, like ancient cannon...Within the hour, armour and infantry were more than a mile inland...* As Isaiah said **“For the LORD of hosts hath purposed...and who shall turn it back?”** Isaiah 14:27. Not Hitler.

### The Unenvied Infantry

The infantry followed the paratroops, glider troops, special armour and commandos. R. W. Thompson<sup>209</sup> writes that *They came ashore at Normandy, the slogging, unglamorous men that no one envied...But they had history on their side.* This was true in that all Allied amphibious operations up until D-Day had succeeded and D-Day would also succeed. It is also true that many slogging, unglamorous individuals are in **“the body of Christ”** 1 Corinthians 12:27 but they have *the future* on their side, the 2<sup>nd</sup> Advent **“when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels”** 2 Thessalonians 1:7.

### Company Sergeant Major Hollis, Teessider, the One D-Day VC

Despite the combined AVREs and infantry advance from Gold Beach, the 6<sup>th</sup> Green Howards were held up by machine gun fire from a hidden pillbox. CSM Stanley Hollis from Teesside described what happened<sup>210</sup>. *Major Lofthouse said to me, ‘there is a pillbox there, Sergeant Major’...So I got my Sten gun and I rushed at it...spraying it hose-pipe fashion. They fired back at me and they missed...I got on top of it and I threw a grenade through the slit and...They were quite willing to forget all about the war.* Hollis won the one D-Day VC. His CO, Lieutenant-Colonel Robin Hastings, said *[CSM Hollis] was absolutely dedicated to winning the war – one of the few men I ever met who felt like that. God wants such men; “go now ye that are men, and serve the LORD; for that ye did desire”* Exodus 10:11.

## D, *then* D plus One

This writer was privileged to receive a signed photograph from one such man, another US paratrooper, Lieutenant later Major Richard D. Winters. See picture. Lieutenant Winters landed in Normandy with the 506<sup>th</sup> Parachute Infantry Regiment of the 101<sup>st</sup> US Airborne Division. Historian Stephen Ambrose<sup>211</sup> writes that at the end of D-Day *Before lying down, Winters later wrote in his diary, "I did not forget to get on my knees and thank God for helping me to live through this day and ask for his help on D plus one."* As the Lord said **"Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof"** Matthew 6:34, that is D, *then* D plus one in **"the patient waiting for Christ"** 2 Thessalonians 3:5. As Major Winters said *"Hang tough!"*

## D-Day to VE Day, ***"The flags of freedom fly all over Europe"***

D-Day June 6<sup>th</sup> 1944 went on to VE Victory in Europe Day May 8<sup>th</sup> 1945. US President Harry S. Truman<sup>212</sup> said *"The flags of freedom fly all over Europe."* That was God's conquest in Europe *but His Return will conquer all*<sup>213</sup>. Amen.



***"Hang Tough!"***



**Major Richard D. Winters  
506<sup>th</sup> Parachute Infantry Regiment  
101<sup>st</sup> US Airborne Division**



***“Greater love hath no man than this,  
that a man lay down his life for his friends” John 15:13***



**Handley Page Halifax<sup>214</sup>**

### **Introduction – Cyril Barton Believed in God**

RAF Pilot Officer Cyril Barton VC was a true disciple of Christ. PO Barton was awarded the VC<sup>215</sup> posthumously for his last operational flight over Germany on March 30<sup>th</sup> 1944. He was captain and pilot of a Handley Page Halifax heavy bomber and his actions testified to the Lord's words in John 15:13 ***“Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.”***

PO Barton's life and testimony could be summed up by the words *Cyril Barton Believed in God*.

Those five words begin the chapter on Pilot Officer Cyril Barton VC in the book *VC's of the Air* by John Frayn Turner<sup>216</sup> published in 1960. Frayn Turner gives summary accounts of the 32 airmen from Britain and the Old Dominions who won the Victoria Cross in WW2. Only

seven survived the war. Cyril Barton, as indicated, was not among them. He was 22 years of age when he died.

### **A Personal Note**

This writer received the book *VC's of the Air* as a Christmas present in 1960. It is very possible that his salvation seven years later was in part the result of the chapter on Pilot Officer Barton VC.

***"Confession is made unto salvation"*** Romans 10:10

Cyril Barton was born in Suffolk but grew up in Surrey where he attended Kingston-on-Thames technical college. On graduation from college Barton became apprenticed to an aircraft factory and continued his studies in the evenings. He lived in New Malden and attended church and Bible class regularly. When his class leader asked Cyril *"Do you know Christ as your personal Saviour?"* Barton answered "Yes." Cyril had fulfilled Romans 10:10 ***"For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation."***

***"Thou shalt be his witness"*** Acts 22:15

Acts 22:15 states ***"For thou shalt be his witness unto all men of what thou hast seen and heard."*** Cyril Barton was. He bore witness to his friends at Youth Services, taught Sunday School and joined in open-air witness. Frayn Turner said he *tackled some of the toughest types in the area, bringing them into the services.* Then in September 1939, things changed radically.

***"Snared in an evil time"*** Ecclesiastes 9:12

Ecclesiastes 9:12 states ***"as the fishes that are taken in an evil net, and as the birds that are caught in the snare; so are the sons of men snared in an evil time, when it falleth suddenly upon them."*** That was what befell the WW2 generation. Cyril was able to join the RAF early in 1941. After a period of training and non-operational duties, he made his first operational flight in July 1943. By March 1944 he'd made 18 operational flights and been promoted to Pilot Officer. He was, however, concerned about maintaining a stronger Christian Witness.



**“Let your light so shine”** Matthew 5:16

The Lord Jesus Christ said **“Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven”** Matthew 5:16. Barton had said in a letter *I felt that my witness was not as vigorous as it should be, and I knew if I didn’t do anything about it I would only slip back.* He asked for prayer, especially from his girlfriend, Doreen. God answered.

On Sunday evening March 26<sup>th</sup> 1944 Barton got back from church to the quarters that he shared with the other two officers in his crew. They were stationed near Selby. He wrote on March 28<sup>th</sup> *I said I would be off the “intercom” for ten minutes and knelt by my bed. I very reverently turned down his favourite radio programme and an awkward hush settled on the room. The Lord was very real to me for a few minutes, and I was very thankful to Him for bringing me through.* The others tried to act normally but when they all turned in Cyril had to remind J to switch off his radio.

**“The fiery trial”** 1 Peter 4:12

1 Peter 4:12 says **“Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you.”** The fiery trial came on March 30<sup>th</sup> 1944 with the Nuremberg raid<sup>217</sup>. The *WW2 Today* site states that 795 aircraft set out. 106 were lost. It was one of the heaviest Allied losses of the war. Night fighters repeatedly attacked Barton’s aircraft. 70 miles from the target an engine was badly damaged, the communications were shot out, fuel tanks were punctured and the turret machine guns disabled. Owing to a confusion of signals, Barton’s navigator, wireless operator and bomb aimer parachuted out of the aircraft. Barton nevertheless pressed on to the target and released his bombs. He and his three remaining crew members then faced a 4½ hour journey home on three engines into strong headwinds without navigational aids. As Barton wrenched the heavy Halifax around, the damaged propeller flew off. Providentially it missed the aircraft. Barton held course as best he could and crossed the English coast near Ryhope Colliery, 90 miles north of his base. Then with fuel almost gone, two engines stopped and the aircraft was now too low for the men to leave safely by parachute. Barton ordered his crew **“Take up crash stations.”** He struggled to avoid some miners’ cottages and then the Halifax fell to earth. The three other crew members aboard the Halifax survived and the three who had baled out were taken prisoner so Barton alone died in the crash. He had fulfilled John 15:13

***“Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.”***

**Last Letter Home and “all things well” Mark 7:37**

Barton had given a letter to his brother, who was saved, to give to his mother if he was killed. It begins *Dear Mum, I hope you never receive this but I quite expect you will.* It ends with *Your loving son, Cyril.* He also wrote to Doreen. In part the letter to his mother says *Except for leaving you...death holds no terrors for me. I know I shall survive the judgement because I have trusted in Christ as my Saviour. All that I am anxious about is that you and the rest of the family will come to know Him...I commend my Saviour to you*<sup>218</sup>. Maybe other members of the family did get saved. Barton is buried in Bonner Hill Road Cemetery, Kingston-upon-Thames and the family's personal message on Cyril's headstone is Romans 8:28 ***“And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God.”*** That is, ***“whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's”*** Romans 14:8. It helps to have this reassurance<sup>219</sup>. Amen.



2tim215truth.com

**"Yea, though I walk through  
the valley of the shadow of  
death, I will fear no evil: for  
thou art with me; thy rod and  
thy staff they comfort me."**

Psalms 23:4 KJV

## Pilot Officer Andrew Mynarski VC

***“All that are with me salute thee” Titus 3:15***



### P/O Mynarski VC Memorial Avro Lancaster and The Final Salute Middleton-St-George Memorial

At what is now Tees International Airport stands a memorial to a Canadian airman<sup>220, 221, 222</sup> who flew from there in WW2 when Durham Tees Valley was RAF Middleton-St-George. That airman was Pilot Officer Andrew Mynarski VC RCAF Royal Canadian Air Force, from Winnipeg. Pilot Officer Mynarski won the VC Victoria Cross posthumously for valour during his last operational flight on June 13<sup>th</sup> 1944. He was 27 years old. This writer came to know of Pilot Officer Mynarski<sup>223</sup> many years ago before getting saved but has since then seen parallels between Pilot Officer Mynarski's valour and that of the Lord Jesus Christ in implementing ***“the gospel of the grace of God”*** Acts 20:24. This work addresses those parallels to illustrate what Paul said of the Lord Jesus Christ ***“And that he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again”*** 2 Corinthians 5:15.

### Last Operational Flight

Pilot Officer Mynarski's last operational flight of the night of June 13<sup>th</sup> was actually the last official operational flight for the entire crew. They were then to be transferred to training duties. Their Lancaster Bomber was part of a raid on Northern France in support of the D-Day Normandy landings but over Cambrai, Northern France, the Lancaster was

attacked by a Junkers JU-88 enemy night fighter. *Raked by cannon fire with major strikes on the port engines and centre fuselage, the Lancaster was engulfed in a hydraulic fluid fire. Losing both port engines, [the pilot] ordered the crew to bail out.* Most were able to do so but not all.

## **Trapped**

Pilot Officer Mynarski was the Lancaster's mid-upper turret gunner. His escape route was through the rear escape door but as Mynarski approached the door, *he saw through the inferno in the rear fuselage, that tail gunner Flying Officer Pat Brophy<sup>224</sup> was trapped in his turret. The tail turret had been jammed part way through its rotation to the escape position.*

## **Through the Flames and Final Salute**

*Without hesitation, Mynarski fought through the flames to Brophy's assistance. He tried using a fire axe to try to pry open the turret doors. When that didn't work, Mynarski resorted to beating at the doors with his hands. All his efforts were in vain and by now Mynarski's flight suit and parachute were on fire. Brophy shouted to the effect 'Get on out, Andy, I've had it!' and waved his friend away. Mynarski crawled back through the flames to the rear door. There, before he jumped, he paused and fixing his gaze on Brophy, Mynarski saluted him.*

## **Falling to Earth**

Mynarski deployed his parachute but it was too badly burnt to slow his descent properly so the drama reached its climax with the Lancaster plummeting down in flames, Brophy still trapped in the rear turret, Mynarski falling too quickly to earth, a human torch. Mynarski landed heavily with his clothes still on fire. French farmers got him to a German hospital but there soon afterwards Pilot Officer Mynarski, severely injured, died from his burns.

## **Resistance Fighter**

The Lancaster crashed with such force that it broke apart. The rear turret was catapulted into a tree where it burst open and Flying Officer Brophy got out of it with only minor injuries. The other five members of the crew also survived and eventually got back to England. Flying Officer Brophy however was able to join the French Resistance. He thereby continued the fight against the enemy on the ground until the liberation of France. Brophy then returned to England in September 1944 where

he was able to testify to Pilot Officer Mynarski's bravery. Brophy's testimony led to the posthumous award of the Victoria Cross to Pilot Officer Mynarski and thanks to the surviving members of the crew, one of the only two airworthy Lancasters in the world was named the Mynarski Memorial Lancaster. See graphic.

***"He died for all, that they which live should...live...unto him"*** 2 Corinthians 5:15

Noting the parallels between Pilot Officer Mynarski VC, the Lord Jesus and ***"the gospel of the grace of God"*** Acts 20:24 Mynarski died to save his fellow airman trapped by fire. All men are trapped by sin indeed lost ***"For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God"*** Romans 3:23. The Lord Jesus died ***"to save that which was lost"*** Matthew 18:11.

Providentially, Brophy was saved and providentially all men may be saved in that ***"For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly"*** Romans 5:6 so ***"That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved"*** Romans 10:9. Given therefore that ***"he died for all, that they which live should...live...unto him"*** 2 Corinthians 5:15 saved men should like Flying Officer Brophy join the resistance as Paul exhorts. ***"Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand"*** Ephesians 6:13.

***"All that are with me salute thee"*** Titus 3:15

***"And having done all, to stand" "stedfast in the faith"*** 1 Peter 5:9 it will be ***"a great thing"*** 1 Corinthians 9:11 ***"at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints"*** 1 Thessalonians 3:13 to hear Him say ***"All that are with me salute thee"*** Titus 3:15<sup>225</sup>.



### **3 John 1:14 KJV**

*But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak face to face. Peace be to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name.*



## Lieutenant Terry Waters GC and Mark 15:31

### Introduction

April 2011 marked the 60<sup>th</sup> Anniversary of the battle of the Imjin River<sup>226</sup> fought during the Korean War, a war that has never officially ended<sup>227</sup>. Only an armistice was declared in 1953. Nevertheless, despite the great cost of the war, Allied efforts achieved one lasting success. 9 KJV Baptist churches exist in South Korea<sup>228</sup>. None exist, or can exist at present in North Korea, where Christians are systematically persecuted<sup>229</sup>.

One individual contribution to the Allied success occurred after the battle of the Imjin River that is notable in that it illustrates Mark 15:31 **“Likewise also the chief priests mocking said among themselves with the scribes, *He saved others; himself he cannot save.*”**

The late General Sir Anthony Farrar-Hockley<sup>230</sup>, former Commander-in-Chief of Allied Forces Northern Europe in NATO, described what happened<sup>231</sup>.

### The Caves

As Captain Farrar-Hockley, General Sir Anthony was adjutant of the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, the Gloucestershire Regiment and went into Communist captivity with the survivors of his battalion when they were forced to surrender after four days of heavy fighting at the battle of the Imjin River, April 22<sup>nd</sup>-25th 1951. General Sir Anthony wrote:

*Part of the unworked coal-mining settlement of Kang-dong [was] known formerly by prisoners as “The Caves.” In 1950 and until the summer of 1951, many United Nations prisoners had been crowded into old tunnels in the hillsides round about, often drenched by the water that ran in from underground streams. The numbers of men who died in these black holes in the ground will never be known exactly. In cross-checking to find our friends, we accounted for over two hundred and fifty deaths; but this is not the total figure.*

*Of all the many stories of gallantry and selflessness on the part of prisoners in these caves, I will recount only one here: a story that was told to us later by men who had formed part of it; a story which provided us with inspiration to continue resistance to our captors during the most difficult moments. Terry - the last remaining platoon commander of “A” Company - was taken to “The Caves” in the summer of 1951. He had been a member of a column of seriously wounded captives which had marched slowly north from the Imjin River some little time after the two main columns had set off. Though he was in great pain from a wound in his leg and a terrible head injury, Terry set a splendid example on the march, caring, as best he could, for other serious casualties with him. By the time they reached “The Caves,” the condition of many prisoners had deteriorated dangerously; for they had had no medical attention of any*

*sort en route and many still wore the dressings, by now ragged and filthy, placed on their wounds by our own medical staffs before capture.*

*Terry, and Sergeant Hoper of the Machine-gun Platoon, were placed with a number of others from the column in a cave already crowded with Koreans - themselves dying of starvation and disease. Except when their two daily meals of boiled maize were handed through the opening, they sat in almost total darkness. A subterranean stream ran through the cave to add to their discomfort, and, in these conditions, it was often difficult to distinguish the dead from the dying.*

*One day, a North Korean colonel visited them to put forward a proposition.*

*"We realize," he said, "that your conditions here are uncomfortable. We sympathize. I, myself, am powerless to help you - unless you are prepared to help us. If you care to join the Peace Movement to fight American Aggression in Korea, we can take you to a proper camp where, in addition to better rations and improved accommodation, your wounds will be cared for by a surgeon."*

*Our men refused this offer, individually. But Terry, seeing their condition, their numbers dwindling, came to a decision on which he acted the next morning. He drew Sergeant Hoper to one side and said:*

*"I have thought this business over and have decided that you must go over to the 'Peace-Fighters' Camp. Most of you will die if you stay here. Go over, do as little as you can; and remember always that you are British soldiers."*

*"What about you, sir?" asked Hoper.*

*"It is different for me," said Terry. "I am an officer; I cannot go. But I order you to go and take our men with you."*

*Terry remained firm in his decision; and when the North Korean colonel returned, as they had guessed he would, Sergeant Hoper and his party left "The Caves" with a group of American soldiers. The colonel pressed Terry to accompany them, advising him that he would not accept a final refusal just then but would return later.*

*He returned four times. Armed with promises of an operation on Terry's wounds by a surgeon, and a special diet of eggs, milk and meat in place of the boiled maize, he failed each time.*

*Terry was a young subaltern, not long out of the Royal Military Academy, Sandhurst. Yet, irrespective of his service and youth, he saw clearly, an officer representing the British Commonwealth in enemy country: by his actions, the Commonwealth's reputation would be judged. Quite simply, he was given a choice: life, and agreement to reject, at least outwardly, the principles for which he was fighting in Korea; or a steadfast adherence to those principles -*

*and death. Coolly, loyally, like the gallant officer he was, Terry chose death. And so he died.*

### ***Posthumous Awards***

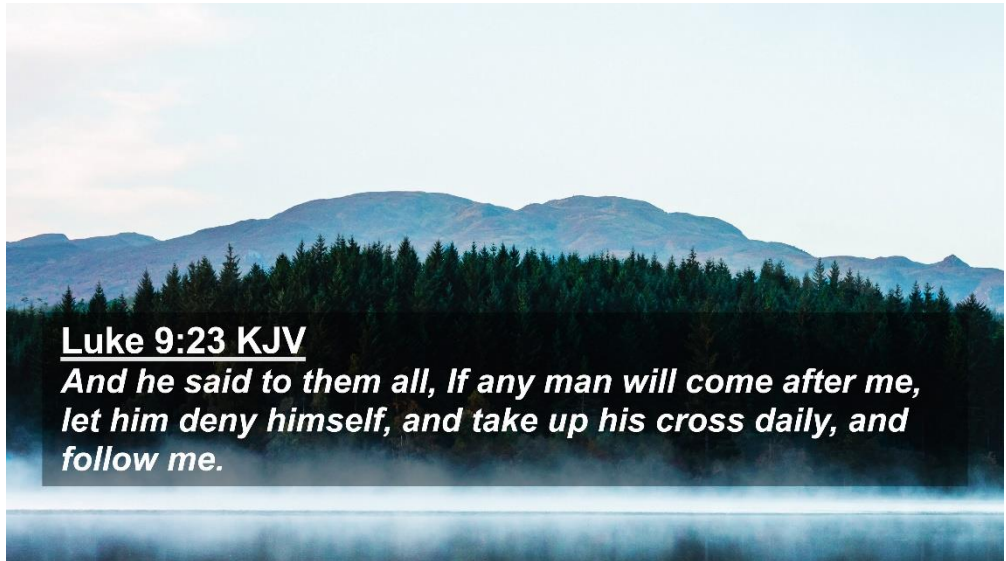
Lieutenant Waters was posthumously awarded the George Cross, GC<sup>232</sup>. He died aged 22. The enclosed photograph<sup>233</sup> shows Lieutenant Waters (left) and his friend Lieutenant Phil Curtis after a church service in an abandoned temple on April 22<sup>nd</sup> 1951. Lieutenant Curtis was posthumously awarded the VC for his gallantry at the battle of the Imjin River.



### ***Call to Follow***

Lieutenant Waters GC took upon himself full responsibility for his men and maintained the honour of his king and realm. He was, in effect, also mocked by his captors but never yielded to them.

He therefore exemplifies both the experience of the Saviour in Mark 15:31 and the kind of man whom the Lord yet calls to follow Him<sup>234</sup>.



## The Shepherd<sup>235</sup>

### Introduction

An incident occurred on Friday, November 7<sup>th</sup> 2008 that was uncannily similar to Frederick Forsyth's novel, *The Shepherd*<sup>236</sup>. Temporarily blinded by a mild stroke, the pilot of a light aircraft was rescued by an RAF pilot who flew alongside the light aircraft and 'talked down' or shepherded its pilot to a safe landing at RAF Linton-on-Ouse in North Yorkshire. In Mr Forsyth's novel, another airborne 'shepherd' rescues a pilot in distress.

### Christmas Leave

It is Christmas Eve 1957 and a moonlit night. A 20-year-old RAF Flying Officer takes off in his Vampire jet fighter from RAF Celle in North Germany. His destination is RAF Lakenheath in Suffolk. He's on his way home for Christmas leave and all goes well – for a while.

### Lost

10 minutes over the North Sea, the Vampire suffers a main fuse blow-out. Its radio and compass are dead, so the pilot can't raise Lakenheath for a heading as he'd intended. The auxiliary compass isn't working either, probably accidentally jarred. The pilot heads for the Norfolk coast, thinking he can find an RAF base where they'll switch on the landing lights when they hear the sound of his approaching aircraft. Then another problem arises - fog.

### Fog

The fog blots out the landscape. His fuel will run out so the pilot follows standard procedure: *those people down there [don't] pay for us to drop a screaming monster of ten tons of steel on top of them on Christmas Eve... You turn your aircraft out to sea.* He does.



### **Prayer**

By now, this lad is desperate enough to pray. But he thinks, *I, who now had need of Him, had taken no notice of Him for so long He'd probably forgotten all about me.* But had He?

### **Triangles**

The pilot flies in slow triangles, to alert a radar operator to send out a guide aircraft, or shepherd. But no-one comes. With less than 10 minutes of fuel left, the pilot is resigned to his fate. Even if he survives the bail-out he will die of exposure in the North Sea. Then he sees a black shadow silhouetted by the moonlight pass across the cloud layer and recognizes it. *It was another aircraft, low against the fog bank, keeping station with me.*

### **Found**

The Vampire pilot closes up on the other aircraft - and is taken aback. *To my surprise, my shepherd was a De Havilland Mosquito, a fighter-bomber of Second World War vintage.* It has the letters JK painted on its nose. The Vampire pilot decides that the Mosquito must be a weather aircraft from RAF Gloucester, diverted to bring him in using GCA, Ground Controlled Approach, because only RAF Gloucester still has Mosquitoes in service. The pilots communicate by hand signals so the Vampire pilot raises five splayed fingers and then draws his forefinger across his throat – meaning five minutes' flying time. The Mosquito pilot acknowledges and takes the Vampire down through the fog. He signals *Please lower your undercarriage* and then *Fly on and land.* With the last of his fuel, the Vampire pilot descends below the fog bank and sees twin rows of landing lights. He touches down safely. The Mosquito hurtles past, the pilot waves and then he's gone.

### **Safe**

A middle-aged station officer in a vintage staff car collects the Vampire pilot and tells him he switched the landing lights on when he heard the Vampire's engine. He says, *"We don't have GCA...[We're] a storage depot."* Because it's Christmas Eve, the only other person at the base is Joe, the elderly mess steward. The staff officer summons Joe, who arranges a room with a fire for the pilot, a change of clothes, a bath and a meal. The pilot phones the nearest RAF base with GCA to tell them he's landed. But the duty officer says they can't have guided the Mosquito because they've been shut down for Christmas since 5 p.m. Only bigger stations, like Marham or Lakenheath will still be operational and they are too far away to have provided the GCA for the Mosquito. The

Vampire pilot then phones RAF Gloucester but they know nothing about him either and they don't fly Mosquitoes any more. They replaced them with jet-engined Canberras, three months before.

### ***The Shepherd***

The pilot notices a photo of a WW2 Mosquito and its pilot on the mantel-piece of his room. The pilot is in his early twenties and the Mosquito has JK painted on the nose. Joe says *"That's a photo of Mr John Kavanagh, sir. He was here during the war. An Irish gentleman. This was his room...I was his batman."* Joe explains that the storage depot was a base for a Mosquito Pathfinder Squadron during the war. He says that after a raid over Germany *"[Mr Johnny] would have his Mosquito refuelled and take off again alone, going back over the Channel or the North Sea to...find some crippled bomber making for the coast and guide it home...sometimes they had their radios knocked out."*

The Vampire pilot thinks he has the explanation. Kavanagh made pots of money after the war, bought a Mosquito from an RAF auction and refurbished it like his old aircraft. The pilot reasons, *[Johnny Kavanagh] 'd been flying back from some trip to Europe, had spotted me turning in triangles...and taken me in tow. Pinpointing his position precisely by crossed radio beacons, knowing this stretch of coast by heart, he'd taken a chance on finding his old airfield...even in thick fog. It was a [huge] risk. But then I had no fuel left, anyway, so it was that or bust.* The pilot intends to trace Kavanagh via the Royal Aero Club, to thank him. Joe adds *"I remember [Mr Johnny] saying to me once, standing right where you are [sir], before the fire: 'Joe,' he said, 'whenever there's one of them out there in the night, trying to get back, I'll go out and bring him home.'"*

The Vampire pilot says *"Well, by the look of it, he's still doing it."*

Joe says with a smile *"Oh, I hardly think so, sir. Mr Johnny went out on his last patrol Christmas Eve nineteen-forty-three, fourteen years ago tonight. He never came back, sir. He went down with his [Mosquito] somewhere out there in the North Sea. Good night, sir. And Happy Christmas."*

### ***Our Shepherd***

We should never forget that 2,000 years ago, another Shepherd came on the scene. Like Mr Johnny, He died but like the shepherd in the story, He is still out there, bringing home the lost sheep.

***"I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep"*** John 10:11. That is what Christmas is about.

## **British Values by Those Who Valued Them**

*I was standing beside Corporal Griffiths, who had his Lewis gun between his elbows on the dew-soaked parapet...Vigilant and serious he stared straight ahead of him and a fine picture of fortitude he made. He was only a stolid young farmer from Montgomeryshire; only; but such men, I think were England, in those dreadful years of war – Captain Siegfried Sassoon<sup>237</sup>*

*Friends had died in the defence of our Indian Empire, but had not our leaders sent it into liquidation by one fell swoop of a pen, so that the clock had now been put back two hundred years to the last days of the Moguls...by garrulous politicians – by demagogues who have never lifted a finger for the Commonwealth except to criticise it from a tub.*

*It was hard to believe that Hector and Tom and Gil gave their lives at Alamein so that in less than three years their country could sign away its interests in the Suez Canal...*

*Where was the meaning? With the Union Jack still flying over nearly one-fifth of the world's land surface, however much it is daily reduced, they say we are a bankrupt, third-rate Power. It can only be true, if it is true, through pure mismanagement...I asked myself if our leaders had stolen our soul [because]...up in the snow on Cisa Pass [with Partisans]...we were British proud to be British – Major Roy Farran<sup>238</sup>*

*[T]he Britain they [14<sup>th</sup> Army Burma veterans] see in their old age is hardly “the land fit for heroes” that they envisaged...It was a reasonable, perfectly possible dream, and for a time, it existed, more or less. And then it changed, in the name of progress and improvement, and enlightenment, which meant the destruction of much that they had fought for and held dear, and the betrayal of familiar things that they had loved. Some of them, to superficial minds, will seem terribly trivial, even ludicrously so – things like county names, and shillings and pence, and the King James Version, and yards and feet and inches – yet they matter to a nation.*

*They did not fight for a Britain which would be dishonestly railroaded into Europe against the people's will; they did not fight for a Britain where successive governments, by their weakness and folly, would encourage crime and violence on an unprecedented scale...they did not fight for a Britain where to hold by truths and values which have been thought good and worthy for a thousand years would be to run the risk of being called “fascist” – that, really, is the greatest and most pitiful irony of all – George MacDonald Fraser<sup>239</sup>*

***“In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established” 2 Corinthians 13:1.***



Those witnesses espoused British values of fortitude, self-sacrifice and long-standing loyalty. It is heartening that those values are not done with because *the King James Version* is not done with and never will be. Note this exhortation from a genuine Briton who espoused another British value, that of resolve.

As will be seen, the King James Bible does resolve best, incomparably best.

Cases of upheld British values follow, with ***“the sword of the LORD”*** Jeremiah 12:12 pre-eminent.

## ***“You Do Your Worst and We Will Do Our Best”***

Winston S. Churchill, July 14<sup>th</sup> 1941<sup>240</sup>



***“We ask no favours of the enemy. We seek from them no compunction...”***

***“Where you have been the least resisted there you have been the most brutal... We will have no truce or parley with you, or the grisly gang who work your wicked will. You do your worst - and we will do our best. Perhaps it may be our turn soon; perhaps it may be our turn now...”*** It is:

***“For they have sown the wind, and they shall reap the whirlwind...”*** Hosea 8:7<sup>241</sup>

Prime Minister of the United Kingdom

The Right Honourable

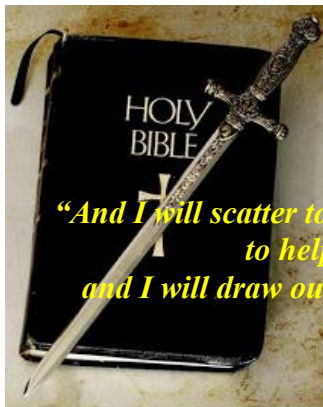
Sir Winston Churchill

KG, OM, CH, TD, DL, FRS, RA

***“Then did I beat them small as the dust before the wind”*** Psalm 18:42  
any and all:



Reaping the Whirlwind



***“And I will scatter toward every wind all that are about him to help him, and all his bands; and I will draw out the sword after them”*** Ezekiel 12:14



***“for the sword of the LORD shall devour from the one end of the land even to the other end of the land: no flesh shall have peace”*** Jeremiah 12:12

**British Values versus “the prophetess Noadiah” aka Nicky Morgan**  
**“Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong”**  
 1 Corinthians 16:13

***Introduction***

Possessed of “*An heart that deviseth wicked imaginations*” Proverbs 6:18 with a mindset “*Having the understanding darkened*” Ephesians 4:18 “*the prophetess Noadiah...that would have put me in fear*” Nehemiah 6:14 aka Education Secretary [2019 Update: At the time of writing] Nicky Morgan is obsessed with stamping out Christian schools because according to Nicky they don’t teach British values<sup>242</sup>.

Nicky Morgan knows no more about British values than Jezebel for whom “*This is the word of the LORD, which he spake by his servant Elijah the Tishbite...the carcase of Jezebel shall be as dung upon the face of the field in the portion of Jezreel; so that they shall not say, This is Jezebel*” 2 Kings 9:36-37.

The aforementioned British values of fortitude, self-sacrifice, long-standing loyalty and resolve may be grouped as Manliness, Steadfastness, Faithfulness, all of which are predicated on the 1611 Holy Bible. This work shows why.

***British Values are King James Bible Values***

This is from the Roman Catholic writer F. W. Faber<sup>243</sup>, speaking in the mid-19<sup>th</sup> century.

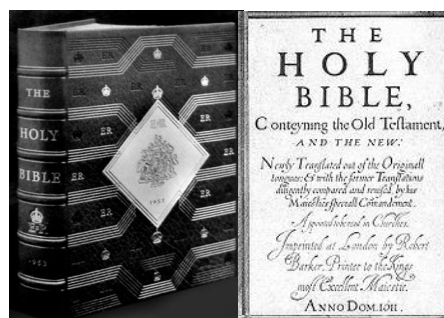
*Who will not say that the uncommon beauty and marvellous English of the Protestant Bible is not one of the great strongholds of heresy [Protestant Bible belief] in this country? It lives on the ear like music that can never be forgotten, like the sound of church bells. Its felicities often seem to be things rather than words. It is part of the national mind, and the anchor of national seriousness.*

The second is from the noted historian, Dr David Starkey<sup>244</sup> from his series on the British Monarchy and the episode on King James 1<sup>st</sup>.

*“The King James Version of the Bible, more than any other book, formed the English language and shaped the English mind.”* Furthermore “*The King James Version of the Bible*” governs Britain.

## ***British Values are King James Bible Governance***

This is how it is for Britain today with respect to ***“the lively oracles”*** Acts 7:38. These are the terms and conditions of the Coronation Oath. The Oath is sealed with the King James Bible<sup>245, 246</sup>, presented to the monarch. The presenter at Queen Elizabeth II’s Coronation was the Moderator of the Church of Scotland, with these words. *“Our gracious Queen: to keep your Majesty ever mindful of the Law and the Gospel of God as the Rule for the whole life and government of Christian Princes, we present you with this Book, the most valuable thing that this world affords. Here is Wisdom [Revelation 13:18]; This is the royal Law [James 2:8]; These are the lively Oracles of God [Acts 7:38, Romans 3:2, Hebrews 5:12, 1 Peter 4:11].”*



**The Coronation Bible  
and Title Page**

The Oath puts all HM subjects under the governance of the King James Bible. If you don’t like being under the governance of the King James Bible, then emigrate because you are a traitor. Turning to Manliness, the first of the British values specified above, the following example is explicit.

### **Company Sergeant Major Hollis, Teessider, the One D-Day VC**

Despite the combined AVREs and infantry advance from Gold Beach, the 6<sup>th</sup> Green Howards were held up by machine gun fire from a hidden pillbox. CSM Stanley Hollis from Teesside described what happened<sup>247</sup>. *Major Lofthouse said to me, ‘there is a pillbox there, Sergeant Major’...So I got my Sten gun and I rushed at it...spraying it hosepipe fashion. They fired back at me and they missed...I got on top of it and I threw a grenade through the slit and...They were quite willing to forget all about the war. Hollis won the one D-Day VC. His CO, Lieutenant-Colonel Robin Hastings, said [CSM Hollis] was absolutely dedicated to winning the war – one of the few men I ever met who felt like that. God wants such men; **“go now ye that are men, and serve the LORD; for that ye did desire”** Exodus 10:11.*

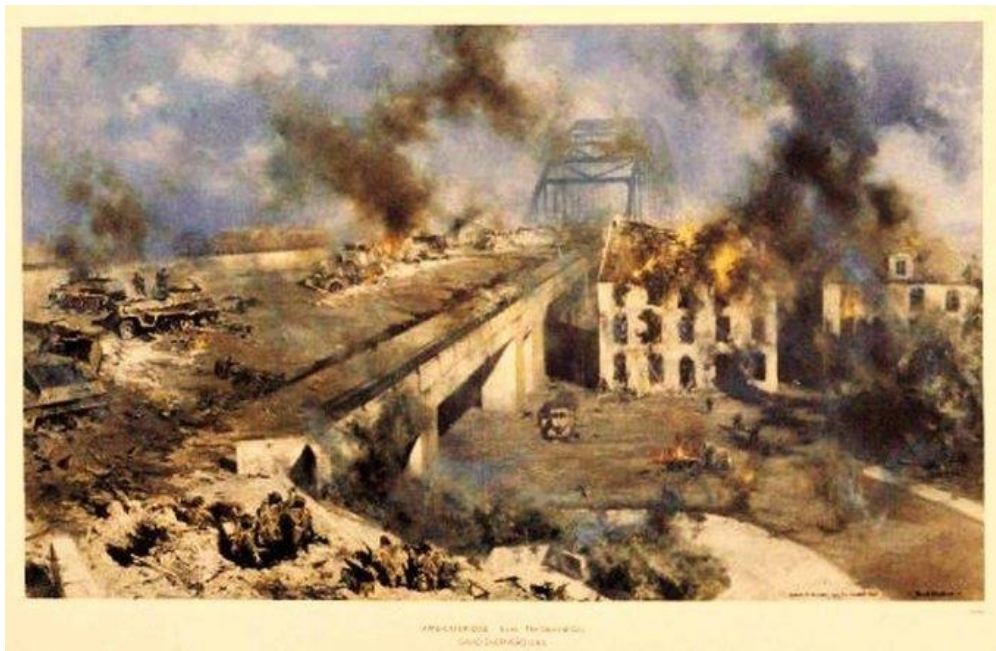
Therefore as further exhortations of the British value of Manliness declare:

***“Be of good courage, and let us play the men for our people, and for the cities of our God: and the LORD do that which seemeth him good”*** 2 Samuel 10:12.

***“Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong”*** 1 Corinthians 16:13 leading to the next example of British values, namely Steadfastness.

***“God save the king!” - The national anthem and a paratrooper’s farewell***

Men who serve the Lord do so with Steadfastness, as these next examples show.



***“Out of ammunition. God Save the King”***

Arnhem Road Bridge September 1944<sup>248</sup>

The expression ***“God save the king!”*** is of course part of England’s national anthem and well-known as such. However, that expression turned up in an unusual place in World War 2. On September 17<sup>th</sup> 1944, British Army paratroopers captured the north end of the road bridge across the Nederrijn or Lower Rhine in the Dutch town of Arnhem<sup>249</sup>. See graphic. After four days of heavy fighting, the paratroopers were finally overwhelmed by superior German forces but on the morning of Thursday September 21<sup>st</sup>, a paratroop signaller ***“known unto God”*** Acts 15:18, Philippians 4:6 radioed a final message from somewhere near the Arnhem Road Bridge.

The last bit of the message said<sup>250</sup> ***Out of ammunition. God Save the King.***

The phrase ***“God save the king!”*** is from the King James Bible. The words occur 5 times, in 1 Samuel 10:24, 2 Samuel 16:16 twice, 2 Kings 11:12, 2 Chronicles 23:11. They will stand there forever.

That reading illustrates something about the 1611 English Bible. The Author of the Book said in Hebrews 13:5 ***“I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.”*** And the Book is like its Author. Therefore when you are face-to-face with the enemy and all the shots seem to be his, the British value of Steadfastness is to stick with your God and your King via the Book. The Book won’t let you down.

***“For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart”*** Hebrews 4:12.

### **D, then D plus One**

This writer was privileged to receive a signed photograph from [one man of Steadfastness]...US paratrooper, Lieutenant later Major Richard D. Winters. See picture. Lieutenant Winters landed in Normandy with the 506<sup>th</sup> Parachute Infantry Regiment of the 101<sup>st</sup> US Airborne Division. Historian Stephen Ambrose<sup>251</sup> writes that at the end of D-Day *Before lying down, Winters later wrote in his diary, “I did not forget to get on my knees and thank God for helping me to live through this day and ask for his help on D plus one.”* As the Lord said ***“Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof”*** Matthew 6:34, that is D, then D plus one in ***“the patient waiting for Christ”*** 2 Thessalonians 3:5. As Major Winters said ***“Hang tough!”*** That is the British value of Steadfastness.



As Paul said ***“Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord”*** 1 Corinthians 15:58.

Turning to the British value of Faithfulness:



***“Great is thy faithfulness”*** Lamentations 3:23

## **Sound of Battle - Christian faith at War**<sup>252</sup>



**An artist's impression of a soldier in wartime**

**Alan O'Reilly is the author of a book entitled 'Sound of Battle' which looks at the impact of Christianity on a soldier's life.**

**Set amongst the bitter fighting in Arnhem and North Africa during World War Two, the book also has Staffordshire references...**

**Alan O'Reilly's book is about a World War Two soldier from Staffordshire whose religious beliefs are tested in battle.**

Alan, a devout Christian himself, tells us how he came to write the story...



I came to England from Australia in 1978 to work for ICI on Tees-side. Two years later, I got married and still live in this country, in spite of the winters!

Soon after my arrival, I visited Staffordshire; and have vivid memories of Cannock Chase and the Roaches.

They struck me as areas of outstanding natural beauty and when, after a visit to the WW2 battlefield areas of Arnhem in Holland, I decided to write a fact-based novel about wartime, it seemed right to include those areas in the book.

I reckoned that the main male character should be an athletic type who regularly ran the Roaches and subsequently trains on the Chase as an infantryman.

### **Christian soldier**

My character later transfers to the Parachute Regiment and sees action in North Africa, Sicily and at Arnhem during the 'Market Garden' operation, where he must reconcile his Christian beliefs with the hideous principle of 'killed or be killed' in desperate, close quarter fighting.

That reconciliation is achieved largely through the knowledge that his comrades-in-arms depend on him, as he does on them, for sheer survival.



At times, that most basic of instincts can eclipse the strongest faith and lay bare our raw humanity.

### **'Sound of Battle...'**

The title Sound of Battle is drawn from the Bible text, Jeremiah 50:22 "A sound of battle is in the land, and of great destruction."

Jeremiah alludes to what is often the ordinary soldier's most distressing experience and indeed one of the cruellest of weapons used against him, the very sound of modern warfare, from shattering bombardments and the savage clatter of Spandau fire to the pitiful cries of friends wounded, dying or unhinged.

The book does have its gentler side, in the form of the main female character who becomes a Queen Alexandra's army nursing Sister but she too must strive to keep trusting in God's mercy when confronted with shockingly wounded men from the battle front.

Not an easy task, especially when one's fiancé is posted Missing In Action.

### **Staffordshire memories**

The late Mr George Leigh, formerly of Stafford, who served with the 2nd Battalion, the Parachute Regiment, provided me with invaluable first-hand material for the campaigns in North Africa and Sicily.

For recollections of the 'Market Garden' operation, I was extremely fortunate during my Arnhem tour to meet a Mr Bill Croft, long-time resident of Tean (near Cheadle in North Staffordshire) who served with the 2nd Battalion the Grenadier Guards, all the way from Normandy to Germany itself.

When Bill's battalion arrived at Sandbostel Concentration Camp in about May 1945, he recalled that the first thing he saw was "a long grey mound, like the ash heaps back home."

It turned out to be a pile of decomposing bodies.

Bill passed away last December [2004], aged 91.

### **A lasting tribute**

Sadly, the WW2 generation is passing from the scene and I like to think that 'Sound of Battle' will help to commemorate the efforts of Bill, George and others like them, to whom we will always be indebted

99:253

*We are children of Thy free men, who sleep beneath the sod.  
For the might of Thine arm we bless thee, Our God, our fathers' God:*



**The sheer panic,  
fear and terror  
of war**

***"...we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness" 2 Peter 3:13.***

***"Great is thy faithfulness" Lamentations 3:23***

Lamentations 3:23 ***"great is thy faithfulness"*** can therefore apply for this beleaguered nation with respect to the Book according to Hebrews 13:5 ***"I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee."*** In dark times in the past it was Britain's Faithfulness to ***"the book of the LORD"*** Isaiah 34:16 that got the nation through those times. Britain's Faithfulness to the Book then is shown by this evaluation<sup>254</sup>.

*In all these instances the Bible means the translation authorised by King James the First...to this day the common human Britisher or citizen of the United States of North America accepts and worships it as a single book by a single author, the book being the Book of Books and the author being God - George Bernard Shaw, a lifelong atheist<sup>255</sup> but who knew literature.*

Britons can only benefit by returning to the British value of Faithfulness to *the Book of Books*<sup>256</sup>.



## Conclusion

This work has addressed the subject of British values of Manliness, Steadfastness, Faithfulness, has shown by scripture and testimony what they actually are and has thereby revealed the subversive actions of ***“the prophetess No-adiah”*** Nehemiah 6:14 aka Nicky Morgan and her grisly gang ***“whose end is to be burned”*** Hebrews 6:8.

It is fitting therefore to have a closing word from another great Briton who valued British values of Manliness, Steadfastness, Faithfulness, one of England’s mighty men and faithful Bible believers, in a letter to the martyrologist, John Foxe<sup>257, 258</sup>.

*To my very loving friend John Foxe...continue a faithful remembrance of us in your prayers that our present service may take that good effect as God may be glorified, His Church, our Queen and country preserved and the enemy of truth [“thy word is truth” John 17:17] utterly vanquished, that we may have continued peace in Israel\* - our enemies are many, but our Protector commandeth the whole world, let us pray continually, and our Lord Jesus will help in good time mercifully - Francis Drake. \*England.*

Drake wrote to Foxe in about 1587, not long before Foxe died.

The great victory over Spain - and Rome - was achieved the following year, when<sup>259</sup> *‘God blew with His winds and they were scattered.’* The prayers of John Foxe and Francis Drake were stunningly answered. They can be so answered again according to real British values of Manliness, Steadfastness, Faithfulness and the promise of *our Protector* so that *the enemy of truth* and indeed *our enemies...many* like Nicky Morgan and her grisly gang ***“were much cast down in their own eyes: for they perceived that this work was wrought of our God”*** Nehemiah 6:16.

See next page for a scan of the letter to Foxe<sup>260</sup>.

***“If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you”*** John 15:7.



## COPY OF A LETTER TO JOHN FOXE

By Francis Drake

The 27 of April we arrived at Calicut where we found much shipping, but among 7 or 8. 30. ships of Calicut great  
 number, some 20 or 30, others 10 or 12, others 8 or 10, others 6 or 8, others 4 or 6, others 2 or 4, others 1 or 2, others 1/2 or 1, others 1/4 or 1/2, others 1/8 or 1/4, others 1/16 or 1/8, others 1/32 or 1/16, others 1/64 or 1/32, others 1/128 or 1/64, others 1/256 or 1/128, others 1/512 or 1/256, others 1/1024 or 1/512, others 1/2048 or 1/1024, others 1/4096 or 1/2048, others 1/8192 or 1/4096, others 1/16384 or 1/8192, others 1/32768 or 1/16384, others 1/65536 or 1/32768, others 1/131072 or 1/65536, others 1/262144 or 1/131072, others 1/524288 or 1/262144, others 1/1048576 or 1/524288, others 1/2097152 or 1/1048576, others 1/4194304 or 1/2097152, others 1/8388608 or 1/4194304, others 1/16777216 or 1/8388608, others 1/33554432 or 1/16777216, others 1/67108864 or 1/33554432, others 1/134217728 or 1/67108864, others 1/268435456 or 1/134217728, others 1/536870912 or 1/268435456, others 1/1073741824 or 1/536870912, others 1/2147483648 or 1/1073741824, others 1/4294967296 or 1/2147483648, others 1/8589934592 or 1/4294967296, others 1/17179869184 or 1/8589934592, others 1/34359738368 or 1/17179869184, others 1/68719476736 or 1/34359738368, others 1/137438953472 or 1/68719476736, others 1/2748779075392 or 1/137438953472, others 1/5497558150784 or 1/2748779075392, others 1/10995116301568 or 1/5497558150784, others 1/21990232603136 or 1/10995116301568, others 1/43980465206272 or 1/21990232603136, others 1/87960930412544 or 1/43980465206272, others 1/175921860825088 or 1/87960930412544, others 1/351843721650176 or 1/175921860825088, others 1/703687443300352 or 1/351843721650176, others 1/1407374886600704 or 1/703687443300352, others 1/2814749773201408 or 1/1407374886600704, others 1/5629499546402816 or 1/2814749773201408, others 1/11258999092805632 or 1/5629499546402816, others 1/22517998185611264 or 1/11258999092805632, others 1/45035996371222528 or 1/22517998185611264, others 1/90071992742445056 or 1/45035996371222528, others 1/180143985484890112 or 1/90071992742445056, others 1/360287970969780224 or 1/180143985484890112, others 1/720575941939560448 or 1/360287970969780224, others 1/1441151883879120896 or 1/720575941939560448, others 1/2882303767758241792 or 1/1441151883879120896, others 1/5764607535516483584 or 1/2882303767758241792, others 1/11529215071032967168 or 1/5764607535516483584, others 1/23058430142065934336 or 1/11529215071032967168, others 1/46116860284131868672 or 1/23058430142065934336, others 1/92233720568263737344 or 1/46116860284131868672, others 1/184467441136527474688 or 1/92233720568263737344, others 1/368934882273054949376 or 1/184467441136527474688, others 1/737869764546109898752 or 1/368934882273054949376, others 1/1475739529092219797504 or 1/737869764546109898752, others 1/2951479058184439595008 or 1/1475739529092219797504, others 1/5902958116368879190016 or 1/2951479058184439595008, others 1/11805916232737758380032 or 1/5902958116368879190016, others 1/23611832465475516760064 or 1/11805916232737758380032, others 1/47223664930951033520128 or 1/23611832465475516760064, others 1/94447329861902067040256 or 1/47223664930951033520128, others 1/188894659723804134080512 or 1/94447329861902067040256, others 1/377789319447608268161024 or 1/188894659723804134080512, others 1/755578638895216536322048 or 1/377789319447608268161024, others 1/1511157277790433072644096 or 1/755578638895216536322048, others 1/3022314555580866145288192 or 1/1511157277790433072644096, others 1/6044629111161732290576384 or 1/3022314555580866145288192, others 1/12089258222323464581152768 or 1/6044629111161732290576384, others 1/24178516444646929162305536 or 1/12089258222323464581152768, others 1/48357032889293858324611072 or 1/24178516444646929162305536, others 1/96714065778587716649222144 or 1/48357032889293858324611072, others 1/193428131557175433298444288 or 1/96714065778587716649222144, others 1/386856263114350866596888576 or 1/193428131557175433298444288, others 1/773712526228701733193777152 or 1/386856263114350866596888576, others 1/1547425052457403466387554304 or 1/773712526228701733193777152, others 1/3094850104914806932775108608 or 1/1547425052457403466387554304, others 1/6189700209829613865550217216 or 1/3094850104914806932775108608, others 1/12379400419659227731100434432 or 1/6189700209829613865550217216, others 1/24758800839318455462200868864 or 1/12379400419659227731100434432, others 1/49517601678636910924401737728 or 1/24758800839318455462200868864, others 1/99035203357273821848803475456 or 1/49517601678636910924401737728, others 1/198070406714547643697606950912 or 1/99035203357273821848803475456, others 1/396140813429095287395213901824 or 1/198070406714547643697606950912, others 1/792281626858190574790427803648 or 1/396140813429095287395213901824, others 1/1584563253716381149580855607296 or 1/792281626858190574790427803648, others 1/3169126507432762299161711214592 or 1/1584563253716381149580855607296, others 1/6338253014865524598323422429184 or 1/3169126507432762299161711214592, others 1/12676506029731049196646844858368 or 1/6338253014865524598323422429184, others 1/25353012059462098393293689716736 or 1/12676506029731049196646844858368, others 1/50706024118924196786587379433472 or 1/25353012059462098393293689716736, others 1/101412048237848393573174758866944 or 1/50706024118924196786587379433472, others 1/202824096475696787146349517733888 or 1/101412048237848393573174758866944, others 1/405648192951393574292699035467776 or 1/202824096475696787146349517733888, others 1/811296385902787148585398070935552 or 1/405648192951393574292699035467776, others 1/1622592771805574297170796141871104 or 1/811296385902787148585398070935552, others 1/3245185543611148594341592283742208 or 1/1622592771805574297170796141871104, others 1/6490371087222297188683184567484416 or 1/3245185543611148594341592283742208, others 1/12980742174444594377366369134968832 or 1/6490371087222297188683184567484416, others 1/25961484348889188754732738269937664 or 1/12980742174444594377366369134968832, others 1/51922968697778377509465476539875328 or 1/25961484348889188754732738269937664, others 1/103845937395556755018930953079750656 or 1/51922968697778377509465476539875328, others 1/207691874791113510037861906159501312 or 1/103845937395556755018930953079750656, others 1/415383749582227020075723812319002624 or 1/207691874791113510037861906159501312, others 1/830767499164454040151447624638005248 or 1/415383749582227020075723812319002624, others 1/1661534998328908080302895249276010496 or 1/830767499164454040151447624638005248, others 1/3323069996657816160605790498552020992 or 1/1661534998328908080302895249276010496, others 1/6646139993315632321211580997104041984 or 1/3323069996657816160605790498552020992, others 1/13292279986631264642423161994208083968 or 1/6646139993315632321211580997104041984, others 1/26584559973262529284846323988416167936 or 1/13292279986631264642423161994208083968, others 1/53169119946525058569692647976832335872 or 1/26584559973262529284846323988416167936, others 1/106338239893050117139385295953664671744 or 1/53169119946525058569692647976832335872, others 1/212676479786100234278770591907329343488 or 1/106338239893050117139385295953664671744, others 1/425352959572200468557541183814658686976 or 1/212676479786100234278770591907329343488, others 1/850705919144400937115082367629317373952 or 1/425352959572200468557541183814658686976, others 1/1701411838288801874230164735258634747904 or 1/850705919144400937115082367629317373952, others 1/3402823676577603748460329470517269495808 or 1/1701411838288801874230164735258634747904, others 1/6805647353155207496920658941034538991616 or 1/3402823676577603748460329470517269495808, others 1/13611294706310414993841317882069077983232 or 1/6805647353155207496920658941034538991616, others 1/27222589412620829987682635764138155966464 or 1/13611294706310414993841317882069077983232, others 1/54445178825241659975365271528276311932928 or 1/27222589412620829987682635764138155966464, others 1/108890357650483319950730543056552623865856 or 1/54445178825241659975365271528276311932928, others 1/217780715300966639901461086113105247731712 or 1/108890357650483319950730543056552623865856, others 1/435561430601933279802922172226210495463424 or 1/217780715300966639901461086113105247731712, others 1/871122861203866559605844344452420990926848 or 1/435561430601933279802922172226210495463424, others 1/1742245722407733119211688688904841981853696 or 1/871122861203866559605844344452420990926848, others 1/3484491444815466238423377377809683963707392 or 1/1742245722407733119211688688904841981853696, others 1/6968982889630932476846754755619367927414784 or 1/3484491444815466238423377377809683963707392, others 1/13937965779261864953693509511238735854829568 or 1/6968982889630932476846754755619367927414784, others 1/27875931558523729907387019022477471709659136 or 1/13937965779261864953693509511238735854829568, others 1/55751863117047459814774038044954943419318272 or 1/27875931558523729907387019022477471709659136, others 1/111503726234094919629548076089909886838636544 or 1/55751863117047459814774038044954943419318272, others 1/223007452468189839259096152179819773677273088 or 1/111503726234094919629548076089909886838636544, others 1/446014904936379678518192304359639547354546176 or 1/223007452468189839259096152179819773677273088, others 1/892029809872759357036384608719279094709092352 or 1/446014904936379678518192304359639547354546176, others 1/1784059619745518714072769217438558189418184704 or 1/892029809872759357036384608719279094709092352, others 1/3568119239491037428145538434877116388236369408 or 1/1784059619745518714072769217438558189418184704, others 1/7136238478982074856291076869754232776472738816 or 1/3568119239491037428145538434877116388236369408, others 1/14272476957964149712582153739508465552945477632 or 1/7136238478982074856291076869754232776472738816, others 1/28544953915928299425164307479016931105890955264 or 1/14272476957964149712582153739508465552945477632, others 1/57089907831856598850328614958033862211781910528 or 1/28544953915928299425164307479016931105890955264, others 1/114179815663713197700657229916067724423563821056 or 1/57089907831856598850328614958033862211781910528, others 1/228359631327426395401314459832135448847127642112 or 1/114179815663713197700657229916067724423563821056, others 1/456719262654852790802628919664270897694255284224 or 1/228359631327426395401314459832135448847127642112, others 1/913438525309705581605257839328541795388510568448 or 1/456719262654852790802628919664270897694255284224, others 1/1826877050619411163210515678657083590777021136896 or 1/913438525309705581605257839328541795388510568448, others 1/3653754101238822326421031357314167181554042273792 or 1/1826877050619411163210515678657083590777021136896, others 1/7307508202477644652842062714628334363108084547584 or 1/3653754101238822326421031357314167181554042273792, others 1/14615016404955289305684125429256668726216169095168 or 1/7307508202477644652842062714628334363108084547584, others 1/29230032809910578611368250858513337452432338190336 or 1/14615016404955289305684125429256668726216169095168, others 1/58460065619821157222736501717026674904864676380672 or 1/29230032809910578611368250858513337452432338190336, others 1/116920131239642314445473003434053349809729352761344 or 1/58460065619821157222736501717026674904864676380672, others 1/233840262479284628890946006868106699619458705522688 or 1/116920131239642314445473003434053349809729352761344, others 1/467680524958569257781892013736213399238917411045376 or 1/233840262479284628890946006868106699619458705522688, others 1/935361049917138515563784027472426798477834822090752 or 1/467680524958569257781892013736213399238917411045376, others 1/1870722099834277031127568054944853596955669644181504 or 1/935361049917138515563784027472426798477834822090752, others 1/3741444199668554062255136109889707193911339288363008 or 1/1870722099834277031127568054944853596955669644181504, others 1/7482888399337108124510272219779414387822678576726016 or 1/3741444199668554062255136109889707193911339288363008, others 1/14965776798674216249020544439558828775645357153452032 or 1/7482888399337108124510272219779414387822678576726016, others 1/29931553597348432498041088879117657551290714306904064 or 1/14965776798674216249020544439558828775645357153452032, others 1/59863107194696864996082177758235315102581428613808128 or 1/29931553597348432498041088879117657551290714306904064, others 1/119726214389393729992164355516470630205162572227616256 or 1/59863107194696864996082177758235315102581428613808128, others 1/239452428778787459984328711032941260410325144455232512 or 1/119726214389393729992164355516470630205162572227616256, others 1/478904857557574919968657422065882520820650288910465024 or 1/239452428778787459984328711032941260410325144455232512, others 1/957809715115149839937314844131765041641300577820930048 or 1/478904857557574919968657422065882520820650288910465024, others 1/1915619430230299679874629688263530083282601155641860096 or 1/957809715115149839937314844131765041641300577820930048, others 1/3831238860460599359749259376527060166565202311283720192 or 1/1915619430230299679874629688263530083282601155641860096, others 1/7662477720921198719498518753054120333130404622567440384 or 1/3831238860460599359749259376527060166565202311283720192, others 1/15324955441842397438997037506108240666260809245134880768 or 1/7662477720921198719498518753054120333130404622567440384, others 1/30649910883684794877994075012216481332521618490269761536 or 1/15324955441842397438997037506108240666260809245134880768, others 1/61299821767369589755988150024432962665043236980539523072 or 1/30649910883684794877994075012216481332521618490269761536, others 1/122599643534739179511976300048865925330086473961079046144 or 1/6129982176

## ***Faith on the Frontline* – Some Observations**

### **Introduction**

We were blessed by a visit from Rhett Parkinson of the AFCU Armed Forces Christian Union<sup>261</sup>. Rhett kindly gave this writer a copy of *Faith on the Frontline*<sup>262</sup> compiled by his wife Liesel. This writer found the book very insightful and has communicated some observations to Rhett as follows. Explanatory notes for the chapters selected are inserted.

Hi Rhett

Hope all's well. I have just finished the book *Faith on the Frontline*. Of the wealth of scriptural lessons in the book, here are a few that stood out:

### **The Wall**

A daughter stands with her WW2 USMC dad before The Wall.

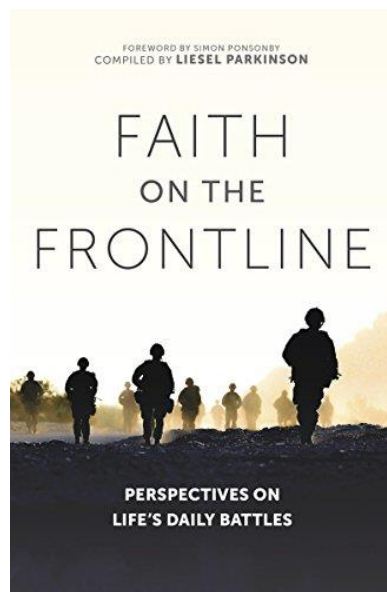
Noting the Medal of Honour Wall, this scripture comes to mind for what is owed to serving men and women then and now **“They were a wall unto us both by night and day...”** 1 Samuel 25:16.

Saipan is of course notorious for the suicide of 1000 Japanese civilians who believed their emperor's false promise of a blessed afterlife<sup>263</sup>.

That is like 2 Corinthians 4:4 concerning **“...them that are lost: In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.”**

The ministry is therefore as the Lord said to Paul **“To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me”** Acts 26:18.

A good exhortation now as then therefore is Colossians 4:17 **“And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it.”**



## What a mess!

An RE regiment carries out battlefield clearance around Port Stanley, Falklands Islands.

This put me in mind of *The 59th Division Its War Story*<sup>264</sup> by Peter Knight, Chapter Eight *The Falaise Pocket*, where the author describes the aftermath. HQ 197 Brigade with supporting troops numbering 30 officers and 250 ORs in total was tasked with battlefield clearance of the pocket. The task was carried out successfully with great professionalism between September-November 1944.

The author describes in vivid and poignant terms the challenging environment in which the clearance force had to work. *The few children then in that area must have before them for life a picture of death as it will never be seen normally...Nowhere appeared capable of hiding this army in retreat, no wood was thick enough to escape the incessant pounding from bomb and cannon shell and no route, however unusual, proved completely successful.*

That is a picture of the judgement of God. **“Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the LORD”** Jeremiah 23:24.

The account is also a picture of how the Lord clears and cleanses us with great professionalism and King David’s exhortation reveals the practical way forward for staying clear and clean.

**“Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you”** John 15:3.

**“Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? by taking heed thereto according to thy word. With my whole heart have I sought thee: O let me not wander from thy commandments. Thy word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against thee”** Psalm 119:9-11.

## O Group

Orders must be given clearly the whole way down the chain of command!

You’ll be familiar with the old Army anecdote of the message *“Send reinforcements we’re going to advance”* that gets garbled in transmission and comes out as *“Send three-and-four pence we’re going to a dance!”*

That put me in mind of 1 Corinthians 14:8 **“For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle?”**

In addition, in a related context, many years ago, one of my students whom I was supervising for a design project drew my attention to a Chemical Engineering textbook that was one of the best that I ever encountered and which I always recommended to students afterwards. It is *A Guide to Chemical Engineering Process Design and Economics*<sup>265</sup> by Gael D. Ulrich. Chapter Nine is on *Report Preparation*. The author describes how it is essential to have a low Fog Index for a good report. He gives examples for The Wall Street Journal, Time and Newsweek and The New Yorker that have Fog Indices of 11, 11, 12 respectively. The opening lines of Lincoln's Gettysburg Address yield a Fog Index of 10. The following example that Ulrich notes is therefore very instructive:

Matthew 6:9-13 King James Version:

**"Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen."** Fog Index: 4

### **No ammo!**

A rifleman returning from patrol discovers that his rifle was minus its magazine!

This reminded me of an incident that Peter Steadman describes in his book *Platoon Commander (Memoirs of a Royal Engineer Officer)*<sup>266</sup> Chapter Five *On to 'A Bridge Too Far'*.

His platoon had drawn off from the road for the night during the advance from northern France in September 1944. Mr Steadman received the ill-news from the commander of an anti-tank battery that an advance down the road by a troop of German tanks was imminent and suggested that the RE platoon set up any anti-tank weapons it had. Mr Steadman knew that this was the only feasible course of action, reflecting that *these Panzers wouldn't likely settle for a friendly wave as they sped by us to seek out more challenging opposition* but what to do about A/T weapons?

A member of the platoon then remembered that they had recently been issued with PIATs, Projectile Infantry Anti-Tank, although the platoon had not been fully trained on them. Nevertheless, they set the weapons up in the best possible tactical positions, loaded them with bombs and waited. The

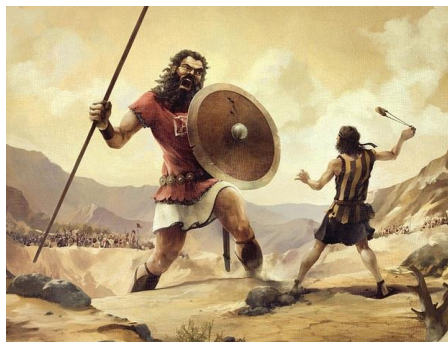


German tanks did not arrive. Mr Steadman wondered if the Panzers *had wisely decided not to confront the awesome firepower of 2 Platoon.*

Mr Steadman relates that in the morning *when we were packing up in readiness for moving on, I reminded the PIAT marksmen about first having to disarm the projectiles by removing the detonating caps. 'The what?' they asked.*

Reproaching himself for not having checked that the bombs had been armed, Mr Steadman ensured that *during the next break in the action we quietly got our PIATs out again, and trained ourselves in how to use them effectively – although it was probably just as well that the Allies managed to win the war without having to call upon 2 Platoon's newly-acquired anti-tank weapon skills.*

That has been a lengthy illustration on the need for preparedness in advance or as the armed forces are known to say alliteratively, though of course it's a little stronger in 'the original,' *'Prior preparation prevents pitifully poor performance.'* That is as David<sup>267</sup> testifies in 1 Samuel 17:36 **"Thy servant slew both the lion and the bear: and this uncircumcised Philistine shall be as one of**



**them, seeing he hath defied the armies of the living God"** and we should note that with respect to ourselves, God does the checking as Paul explains **"So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God"** Romans 14:12.

Make sure then that you have done all you can to wield **"the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God"** Ephesians 6:17 with effect as Paul further explains. **"Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth"** 2 Timothy 2:15.

### Commissioned

Every British Army commissioned officer receives this solemn briefing from the Crown. This evocative account brought to mind the Lord's basic commission to every believer through Paul, challenging though it is, certainly for this writer.

**“But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God” Acts 20:24. As John Wayne<sup>268</sup> remarks in *The Longest Day* “It’s a h-e-l-l of a war, but God willing, we’ll do what we came here to do.”**



**“And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them” Matthew 21:6.**

### **Quarter nightmare**

Necessary exorcism of a married quarters turned haunting into holiness.

This harrowing account that nevertheless ended bringing glory to the Lord Jesus Christ by the simple and effective expedient of praying in every room of the new dwelling brought to mind King David’s pledge for his household and the good outcome it would have today when coupled with Paul’s assurance to today’s believer.

**“...I will walk within my house with a perfect heart. I will set no wicked thing before mine eyes: I hate the work of them that turn aside; it shall not cleave to me” Psalm 101:2-3.**

**“Now thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of his knowledge by us in every place” 2 Corinthians 2:14.**

Yours in the Lord Jesus Christ  
Alan O’R

**P.S. This is for all the contributions to the book.**

Exodus 3:17 states **“And I have said, I will bring you up out of the affliction of Egypt unto the land of the Canaanites, and the Hittites, and the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites, unto a land flowing with milk and honey.”** Exodus 3:17 pictures the way of comfort that today’s believer needs.

Likewise Jonah 2:7 **“When my soul fainted within me I remembered the LORD: and my prayer came in unto thee, into thine holy temple.”**



Wounded Ed Tipper is comforted by his friend Joe Liebgott<sup>269</sup>  
*Band of Brothers* Episode 3 *Carentan*, 1 minute 50 seconds in

***“Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort; Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God”***

2 Corinthians 1:3-4.

## Sergeant Daniel Militello – Testimonial Letter<sup>270, 271</sup>

### Testimonial Letter

We recieved the following word of testimony from a converted Roman Catholic named Robert Franz Militello, which we trust will prove to be a blessing to the reader.

Dear Brother Ruckman, point soldier in the service of our Lord Jesus Christ:

How thankful we are to God for your dogmatic defense of His word in the King James Version.

I had written you once before, and thank you kindly for your reply. I had written that as a combat soldier in World War II, I married a German girl I met during patrol several months before the end of the war. Our marriage was done secretly according to international law, despite the fraternization ban. Our son, Robert Franz Militello was born July 26th, 1946. Our love story recieved tremendous publicity in the press and radio, internationally. It is a deep story; however, it was later in years that I realized its manifestation. My son was the very first registered in all Europe as a U.S. citizen born of a combat G.I. My wife and son arrived in the USA in November, 1946, just 3½ months after his birth. The efforts involved to get him here involved politicians, General Eisenhower, and finally, the State

Department, and General Clay.

Robert was educated in a Catholic elementary school. I was Catholic, of Italian descent, carrying the badge of ignorance and the yoke of tradition. My wife Kathe was Evangelisch. Robert was later educated in a private school of Jesuits. He later recieved a bachelor's degree in Journalism, and a master's degree in political science. He was politically active as a personal supporter and writer for the new governor of New York, Mario Cuomo. In

his early thirties, Robert quit politics and blamed the hypocrisy, deception, and fraud. Right after he was born again, he dove into the King James Version with a drive and energy that was, and still is, relentless. His ripping into the politics of the Jesuits appeared in Chick Publications, the Church Magazine in London, England, and Liverpool. His taped sermons have flooded Texas. He appeared as a guest preacher in Bible Baptist Church in Missouri. He makes his living in civil service for the City of New York. He resides in his small, one family home in Brooklyn, New York, and has a small congregation in his basement church. He is always out every Saturday street preaching. He appeared in St. Albans Evangelical Missionary preaching with fire where 300 black Christians listened. Bob and I were the only white Christians there. The blacks call him John the Baptist, but I call him the second German Martin Luther. Robert has four children, Gregory, 16, Kathyrine, 13, Joshua, 4, and Elissa, 1. Robert is one of my three children. I have 2 daughters who have children. All in all, Kathe and me have 11 grandchildren. Although my son was saved, I was born again in my fifties. Thank God all my children and grandchildren are saved, and reared as Bible believing Christians. I am retired, and now live on Jones Road, Round Top, New York, 12473, about 40 miles south of Albany. My wife and I lead a simple life seeking first the kingdom of God every day in our remaining years.

God bless you, sir. Its an honor to be given access to our fight for our Lord, and to join you in every skir-

mish. Let the non-believers hear and join or blow their rebellion out of their barracks bag. Yours in "Jesus Christ,"  
Daniel Militello. ★

### Explanatory Note:

Sergeant Daniel Militello, now with the Lord, saw combat in France and Germany with the US Army 2<sup>nd</sup> Armoured Division in WW2, US Seventh Army. In 2013, aged 92, he was awarded the Knight of the Legion of Honour medal at an award ceremony conducted by the Deputy Consul General of France. Sergeant Militello was cited for having taken part in the liberation of France.





## Jersey Occupation 1940-1945

### Introduction

Wikipedia describes the German WW2 occupation of Jersey<sup>272</sup> and the other Channel Islands:

The **German occupation of the Channel Islands** lasted for most of [World War II](#), from 30 June 1940 until liberation on 9 May 1945. The [Bailiwick of Jersey](#) and [Bailiwick of Guernsey](#) are two British [Crown dependencies](#) in the [English Channel](#), near the coast of [Normandy](#). The [Channel Islands](#) were the only *de jure* part of the [British Empire](#) to be occupied by [Nazi Germany](#) during the war. Photo captions are from Wikipedia:

Visible reminders of the German occupation remain<sup>273</sup>:

Another reminder of the German occupation is the German underground hospital, now the Jersey War Tunnels<sup>274</sup>.

### Jersey War Tunnels Revelations

The exhibit reveals the effects of the German occupation:

1. The German flag replaced any national or local flags.
2. Directives from a remote central power, i.e. Berlin, had to be implemented without question no matter how obscure, disadvantageous or stupid. At times they even confused the German occupiers.
3. German law superseded local law. A continental army and police force, the Gestapo, were in charge.
4. The Channel Islands were severed from the British Isles and forced into the Nazis' then Channel Region.



As part of the [Atlantic Wall](#) the [German forces](#) and the [Organisation Todt](#) constructed fortifications around the coasts of the [Channel Islands](#) such as this observation tower at [Battery Moltke](#) an uncompleted [World War II](#) former [coastal artillery](#) battery in [St Ouen](#) north-west [Jersey](#).



**Hohlgangsanlage 8** (often abbreviated to **Ho8**, also known as the **German Underground Hospital** or the **Jersey War Tunnels**) was a partially completed underground hospital complex in [St. Lawrence, Jersey](#), built by [German](#) occupying forces during the [occupation of Jersey](#) during [World War II](#).

5. Children in schools were forced to start learning the German language.
6. Everyone was forced to carry an ID card.
7. Some folk collaborated with the occupiers and even ratted on their neighbours, mainly to settle old scores, about clandestine radio sets, resulting in arrest of the accused, imprisonment and even death in concentration camps. The Channel Island of Alderney was turned into a concentration camp.
8. Some young women took up with the occupying males, who bought them presents, including expensive leather shoulder bags. These women were known as *Jerry bags*.
9. A large number of Channel Island folk were removed and imprisoned because they were born in England. That was a German reprisal for internment by the British of German civilians when the British occupied part of the Persian Gulf. Not all Channel Island detainees survived to return home.
10. The Channel Islands suffered a huge influx of foreign forced labour from various parts of occupied Europe to work on the occupier's projects e.g. the underground hospital, also fortifications against invasion. The Channel Islanders had no say over that huge, foreign and unwelcome influx.

In sum the Channel Islanders suffered under the German occupation as in Nehemiah 9:36-37 **...for the land that thou gavest unto our fathers...behold, we are servants in it...and we are in great distress.**

### **Liberation Day and Major Hugh Le Brocq**

Victory came in May, 1945 and the Channel Islands were returned to their rightful inhabitants. When the Allied liberation forces landed at St Helier, Jersey on May 8<sup>th</sup> 1945, to be known ever after in the Channel Islands as Liberation Day<sup>275</sup>, an essential task was immediately carried out:

*Colonel Robinson and I and our detachment marched ashore. We could not march very far in ranks because the crowd surged forward to embrace us. My task was to pull the Swastika down on Fort Regent and hoist the Union Jack – Captain later Major Hugh Le Brocq, the first Jersey officer in the British Army to land with the liberation forces.*

**Our Liberation Day**

Our Liberation Day<sup>276</sup> will dawn with the return of **the Lord from heaven** 1 Corinthians 15:47.

# Verse Of The Day

CL

~1 Thessalonians 4:16-17 (KJV)~

For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

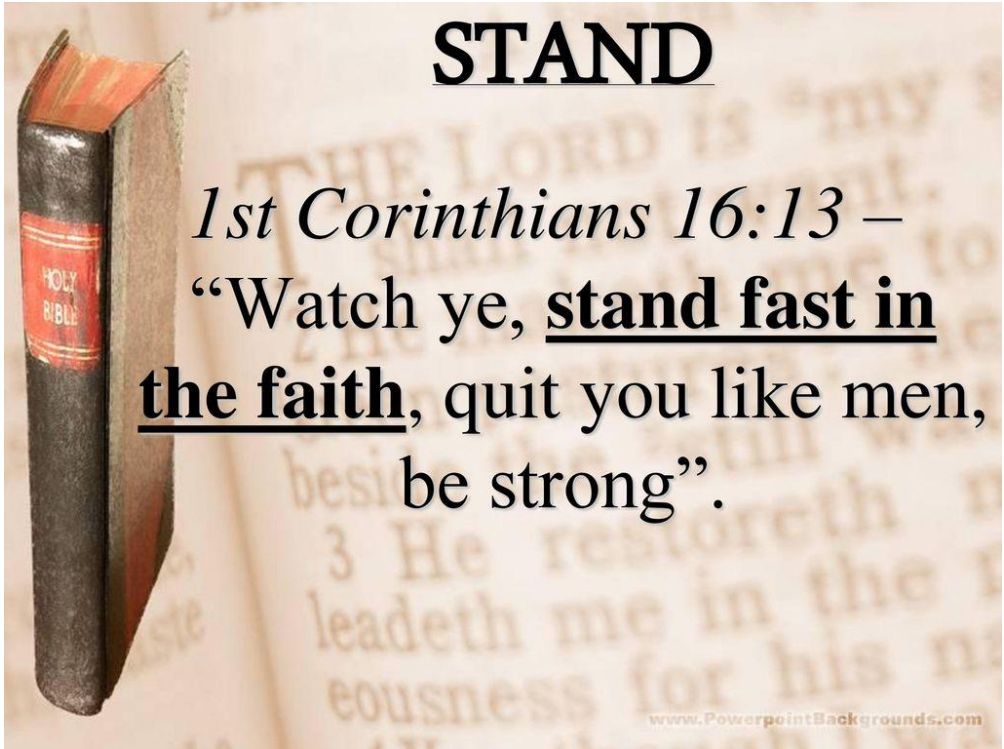
CL



# STAND

*1st Corinthians 16:13 –*

“Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong”.



## References

All web references were current at the time of writing unless stated as unavailable. Web reference and author are given as appropriate the first time a particular work is cited. Only the work itself is cited in subsequent references. Where multiple editions may exist, publishers are noted for page numbers for the editions cited.

See [shop.timefortruth.co.uk/ruckman.html](http://shop.timefortruth.co.uk/ruckman.html) for Dr Ruckman's books.

<sup>1</sup> [slideplayer.com/slide/13103861/](http://slideplayer.com/slide/13103861/) *What this is NOT What this IS. What this is NOT What this IS.* Slide 47/54

<sup>2</sup> [www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/isaiah-8-20-kjv.php](http://www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/isaiah-8-20-kjv.php)  
[www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/acts-20-32-kjv.php](http://www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/acts-20-32-kjv.php)

<sup>3</sup> [image.slidesharecdn.com/2samuel23bmoremightymen-131103061544-phpapp02/95/2-samuel-23b-more-mighty-men-2-638.jpg?cb=1383459391](http://image.slidesharecdn.com/2samuel23bmoremightymen-131103061544-phpapp02/95/2-samuel-23b-more-mighty-men-2-638.jpg?cb=1383459391)

<sup>4</sup> [store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/) *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 483-484

<sup>5</sup> *Ruckman Reference Bible* p 1557

<sup>6</sup> [www.goldenageproject.org.uk/974.php](http://www.goldenageproject.org.uk/974.php) *George Of Lydda - Soldier Saint & Martyr*

<sup>7</sup> [www.visitengland.com/blog/things-do/april-2016/seven-things-do-st-georges-day](http://www.visitengland.com/blog/things-do/april-2016/seven-things-do-st-georges-day) *Seven things to do on St George's Day*

<sup>8</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Saint-George-1989-publication-Gordon/dp/0934666326](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Saint-George-1989-publication-Gordon/dp/0934666326) *Saint George* by E. O. Gordon, pp 14-17

<sup>9</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nicomedia](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nicomedia) *Nicomedia*

<sup>10</sup> *Saint George* pp 3, 6-9, 21

[www.amazon.co.uk/George-Lydda-Soldier-Saint-Martyr/dp/B002DVF0SG](http://www.amazon.co.uk/George-Lydda-Soldier-Saint-Martyr/dp/B002DVF0SG) *George of Lydda* by I. Hill Elder, pp 9-10, 13-14, 17-19, 29-30

George's grandfather, John, was the Roman Governor of Cappadocia, part of what is now Turkey. This accounts for the mistaken idea that St George was Turkish. St George, moreover, is not to be confused with the avaricious George of Cappadocia, Bishop of Alexandria, who was lynched by his own congregation in 362 A.D.

<sup>11</sup> *Saint George* pp 7-8

*George of Lydda* p 20

<sup>12</sup> *Saint George* p 13

<sup>13</sup> *George of Lydda* p 26

<sup>14</sup> [www.amazon.com/Halleys-Bible-Handbook-Abbreviated-Commentary/dp/B001TIEQC0](http://www.amazon.com/Halleys-Bible-Handbook-Abbreviated-Commentary/dp/B001TIEQC0) *Halley's Bible Handbook* by Henry H. Halley, p 793

[www.sdadefend.com/Living-Word/Wilkinson/AuthorizedBibleTOC.htm](http://www.sdadefend.com/Living-Word/Wilkinson/AuthorizedBibleTOC.htm) *Our Authorized Bible Vindicated* by Dr Benjamin Wilkinson, Chapter 2

Between 67 and 303 A.D., Imperial Rome instigated ten distinct persecutions against the early Church, of which Diocletian's was the last. The total number of victims must number in the hundreds of thousands. *Untold millions* more would die, according to Henry Halley, under *the iron heel of the Papacy* according to Benjamin Wilkinson when Imperial Rome metamorphosised into the present-day Papal Rome

<sup>15</sup> *Saint George* p 14

<sup>16</sup> *Saint George* p 20-23

*George of Lydda* p 26

<sup>17</sup> *George of Lydda* pp 26-31

<sup>18</sup> *Saint George* p 27

*George of Lydda* p 31

<sup>19</sup> [www.historic-uk.com/HistoryUK/HistoryofEngland/St-George-Patron-Saint-of-England/St-George – Patron Saint of England](http://www.historic-uk.com/HistoryUK/HistoryofEngland/St-George-Patron-Saint-of-England/St-George-Patron-Saint-of-England/)

<sup>20</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle\\_of\\_Agincourt](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle_of_Agincourt) *Battle of Agincourt*

<sup>21</sup> [rssg.org.uk/additional-resources/history-of-st-george/](http://rssg.org.uk/additional-resources/history-of-st-george/) *The Royal Society of Saint George*

Note that this site locates George's birthplace as Turkey, which location is not borne out by other authorities. See works by Elder, p 17 and Gordon, p 6. However, the site agrees with these other authorities in other aspects of George's life and witness and overall is most informative

<sup>22</sup> *George of Lydda* p 22

<sup>23</sup> [www.reformation.org/emperor-jesus-constantine-was-apollyon.html](http://www.reformation.org/emperor-jesus-constantine-was-apollyon.html) *EMPEROR JESUS CONSTANTINE WAS APOLLYON MANIFEST IN THE FLESH!* Not a Bible-believing site but historically informative

<sup>24</sup> *Saint George* p 23

<sup>25</sup> [www.britannica.com/biography/Saint-George](http://www.britannica.com/biography/Saint-George) *St. George Christian Martyr*  
[shakespeare.mit.edu/henryv/henryv.3.1.html](http://shakespeare.mit.edu/henryv/henryv.3.1.html) *Henry V*, Act 3, Scene 1

<sup>26</sup> [erinlawless.files.wordpress.com/2013/04/george1.jpg](http://erinlawless.files.wordpress.com/2013/04/george1.jpg)

<sup>27</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Living\\_Legend\\_\(attraction\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Living_Legend_(attraction)) *Living Legend (attraction) The Jersey Experience*

<sup>28</sup> [www.bbc.co.uk/news/57001584](http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/57001584) *Jersey fishing: What's the row between UK and France about?* by Reality Check team

<sup>29</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Renaud\\_De\\_Carteret\\_III](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Renaud_De_Carteret_III) *Renaud d Carteret*  
[www.behance.net/gallery/12269907/De-Carteret-Family-Crest](http://www.behance.net/gallery/12269907/De-Carteret-Family-Crest) *de Carteret Family Crest* uploaded by Luke Ritchie

<sup>30</sup> [www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/devoir](http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/devoir) *Definition of Devoir*

<sup>31</sup> [file:///C:/Users/User/AppData/Local/Temp/TheAncestor\\_10050792-1.pdf](file:///C:/Users/User/AppData/Local/Temp/TheAncestor_10050792-1.pdf) *Forgotten Books* p 221 *Our Oldest Families*

<sup>32</sup> [www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/2-samuel-15-15-kjv.php](http://www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/2-samuel-15-15-kjv.php)

<sup>33</sup> [www.christian.org.uk/news/36-things-worth-knowing-about-magna-carta/](http://www.christian.org.uk/news/36-things-worth-knowing-about-magna-carta/) *36 things worth knowing about Magna Carta*

<sup>34</sup> [www.bl.uk/magna-carta/articles/magna-carta-english-translation](http://www.bl.uk/magna-carta/articles/magna-carta-english-translation) *English translation of Magna Carta*

<sup>35</sup> [biography.yourdictionary.com/stephen-langton](http://biography.yourdictionary.com/stephen-langton) *Stephen Langton Facts*

<sup>36</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Medal\\_bar](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Medal_bar) *Medal bar*

<sup>37</sup> [scriptoriumdaily.com/who-divided-the-bible-into-chapters/](http://scriptoriumdaily.com/who-divided-the-bible-into-chapters/) *Who Divided the Bible into Chapters?* by Fred Sanders

<sup>38</sup> [www.biblestudy.org/question/when-was-bible-divided-into-chapters-verses.html](http://www.biblestudy.org/question/when-was-bible-divided-into-chapters-verses.html) *Who divided up the Bible?*

<sup>39</sup> [www.jesus-is-lord.com/pref1611.htm](http://www.jesus-is-lord.com/pref1611.htm) *The Translators to the Reader, The Epistle Dedicatory*

- <sup>40</sup> [artuk.org/discover/artworks/the-battle-of-the-alma-20-september-1854-183052](http://artuk.org/discover/artworks/the-battle-of-the-alma-20-september-1854-183052) *The Battle of the Alma, 20 September 1854*  
[collection.nam.ac.uk/detail.php?acc=1962-07-1-1](http://collection.nam.ac.uk/detail.php?acc=1962-07-1-1) *The Battle of the Alma, 20 September 1854*  
[warfarehistorynetwork.com/2016/11/01/battle-of-alma-first-blood-in-the-crimea/](http://warfarehistorynetwork.com/2016/11/01/battle-of-alma-first-blood-in-the-crimea/) *Battle of Alma: First Blood in the Crimea* by Eric Niderost
- <sup>41</sup> [www.historyhome.co.uk/forpol/crimea/gowing/voiceov.htm](http://www.historyhome.co.uk/forpol/crimea/gowing/voiceov.htm) *Voice from the Ranks: a personal narrative of the Crimean Campaign* by Sergeant Timothy Gowing, Royal Fusiliers
- <sup>42</sup> [www.facebook.com/DaughterofGod077/photos/a.2239069512804014/2691583444219283/?type=3&theater](https://www.facebook.com/DaughterofGod077/photos/a.2239069512804014/2691583444219283/?type=3&theater)
- <sup>43</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The\\_Civil\\_War\\_%28TV\\_series%29](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Civil_War_%28TV_series%29) *The Civil War (miniseries)*  
[www.historynet.com/broken-bond.htm](http://www.historynet.com/broken-bond.htm) *A Broken Bond? The Little Round Top Feud Between Joshua Chamberlain and Ellis Spear*
- <sup>44</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Joshua\\_Chamberlain](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Joshua_Chamberlain) *Joshua Chamberlain*  
[www.battlefields.org/learn/articles/defense-little-round-top](http://www.battlefields.org/learn/articles/defense-little-round-top) *Defense of Little Round Top*
- <sup>45</sup> [www.nationalcivilwarmuseum.org/product-tag/joshua-l-chamberlain/](http://www.nationalcivilwarmuseum.org/product-tag/joshua-l-chamberlain/) *Joshua L. Chamberlain*  
[dragon1st.tripod.com/cw/files/jlc1.html](http://dragon1st.tripod.com/cw/files/jlc1.html) *The Biography of General Joshua L. Chamberlain "One of the Knightliest Soldiers"*  
[www.amazon.com/Joshua-L-Chamberlain-American-Military/dp/1849085595](http://www.amazon.com/Joshua-L-Chamberlain-American-Military/dp/1849085595) *Joshua L. Chamberlain: The Life in Letters of a Great Leader of the American Civil War* by Thomas Desjardin
- <sup>46</sup> [www.amazon.com/Hands-Providence-Joshua-Chamberlain-American/dp/0807849804](http://www.amazon.com/Hands-Providence-Joshua-Chamberlain-American/dp/0807849804) *In the Hands of Providence* by Alice Rains Trulock
- <sup>47</sup> *In the Hands of Providence* pp 146-147
- <sup>48</sup> [archive.org/details/armylifeprivates00gerr](http://archive.org/details/armylifeprivates00gerr) *Army Life A Private's Reminiscences of The Civil War* by Rev. Theodore Gerrish, late a member of the 20<sup>th</sup> Maine Vols., p 108  
[www.amazon.com/Army-Life-Privates-Reminiscences-Civil/dp/1376661594](http://www.amazon.com/Army-Life-Privates-Reminiscences-Civil/dp/1376661594) *Army Life; a Private's Reminiscences of The Civil War* by Theodore Gerrish
- <sup>49</sup> *In the Hands of Providence* pp 214-215
- <sup>50</sup> [www.pinterest.co.uk/pin/320529698459332033/](http://www.pinterest.co.uk/pin/320529698459332033/)
- <sup>51</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mary\\_Ann\\_Bickerdyke](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mary_Ann_Bickerdyke) *Mary Ann Bickerdyke*  
[archive.org/stream/cycloneincalico001060mbp/cycloneincalico001060mbp\\_djvu.txt](http://archive.org/stream/cycloneincalico001060mbp/cycloneincalico001060mbp_djvu.txt) *Cyclone in Calico* by Nina Brown Baker, pp 54-55, 42, 52, 84-85, 86, 159-160 in order of citation
- <sup>52</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William\\_Tecumseh\\_Sherman](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Tecumseh_Sherman) *William Tecumseh Sherman*
- <sup>53</sup> [mybiblenotebook.com/imgcards/verses/17045.php](http://mybiblenotebook.com/imgcards/verses/17045.php)
- <sup>54</sup> [www.booktopia.com.au/search.ep?author=Peter%20FitzSimons](http://www.booktopia.com.au/search.ep?author=Peter%20FitzSimons) *Mawson* by Peter Fitzsimons, pp xv, 33-45, 130-133, 173-174, 203-205, 370-372, 387-393, 404-411, 425-427, 433-434, 449, 454-456, 465-466, 468-469, 472-481\*, 521-528, 635-637\*, 661, 672-681 for a résumé of Mawson's Antarctic achievements. \*Wilson's and Bowers' last letters show that they were saved men  
[www.penguin.com.au/books/mawson-9780857987204](http://www.penguin.com.au/books/mawson-9780857987204) *Mawson* by Peter Fitzsimons

- <sup>55</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Douglas\\_Mawson](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Douglas_Mawson) *Douglas Mawson*  
[adb.anu.edu.au/biography/mawson-sir-douglas-7531](http://adb.anu.edu.au/biography/mawson-sir-douglas-7531) *Mawson, Sir Douglas (1882–1958)*
- <sup>56</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scott\\_of\\_the\\_Antarctic\\_\(film\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scott_of_the_Antarctic_(film)) *Scott of the Antarctic (film)*
- <sup>57</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Beardmore\\_Glacier](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Beardmore_Glacier) *Beardmore Glacier*  
[happy-feet-fanon.fandom.com/wiki/Beardmore\\_Glacier?file=Beardmore\\_Glacier\\_-\\_Antarctica.jpg](http://happy-feet-fanon.fandom.com/wiki/Beardmore_Glacier?file=Beardmore_Glacier_-_Antarctica.jpg) *Beardmore Glacier*
- <sup>58</sup> [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/why-the-av-only-7434.php](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/why-the-av-only-7434.php) *The 1611 Holy Bible versus Bible Corrupter Edwin Palmer* p 116
- <sup>59</sup> [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/) *Royal Law – James 2:8*
- <sup>60</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lawrence\\_Oates](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lawrence_Oates) *Lawrence Oates*
- <sup>61</sup> [southernocean.ghgonline.org/](http://southernocean.ghgonline.org/) *The Southern Ocean*
- <sup>62</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Robert\\_Falcon\\_Scott](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Robert_Falcon_Scott) *Robert Falcon Scott*  
[en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Terra\\_Nova\\_Expedition](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Terra_Nova_Expedition) *Terra Nova Expedition*
- <sup>63</sup> [atributetoaustralianchristians.wordpress.com/2017/12/27/the-pocket-testament-league-australia/](http://atributetoaustralianchristians.wordpress.com/2017/12/27/the-pocket-testament-league-australia/) *A tribute to influential Australian Christians - The Pocket Testament League, Australia*
- <sup>64</sup> [ptl-india.info/general-category/history-of-pocket-testament-league/](http://ptl-india.info/general-category/history-of-pocket-testament-league/) *History of Pocket Testament League*
- <sup>65</sup> [www.longlongtrail.co.uk/army/some-british-army-statistics-of-the-great-war/](http://www.longlongtrail.co.uk/army/some-british-army-statistics-of-the-great-war/) *Some British Army statistics of the Great War*  
[www.biblesociety.org.uk/latest/news/bbc-report-highlights-importance-of-bible-to-ww1-soldiers/](http://www.biblesociety.org.uk/latest/news/bbc-report-highlights-importance-of-bible-to-ww1-soldiers/) *BBC report highlights importance of Bible to WW1 soldiers* Author: Bible Society, 5 November 2018 (Last updated: 25 May 2021)
- <sup>66</sup> [www.scripture-images.com/desktop-wallpaper/kjv/romans-1-16-kjv-hd-wallpaper.php](http://www.scripture-images.com/desktop-wallpaper/kjv/romans-1-16-kjv-hd-wallpaper.php)
- <sup>67</sup> [ensignmessage.com/articles/the-angels-of-mons-our-protective-god/](http://ensignmessage.com/articles/the-angels-of-mons-our-protective-god/) *THE ANGELS OF MONS – OUR PROTECTIVE GOD – (1)* by Bruce Horner
- <sup>68</sup> [100yearsagotoday.wordpress.com/2015/02/11/angel-of-mons-incident-puzzles-british-brigadier-general/](http://100yearsagotoday.wordpress.com/2015/02/11/angel-of-mons-incident-puzzles-british-brigadier-general/) *“Angel Of Mons” Incident Puzzles British Brigadier-General*
- <sup>69</sup> [ensignmessage.com/articles/the-angels-of-mons-our-protective-god-2/](http://ensignmessage.com/articles/the-angels-of-mons-our-protective-god-2/) *THE ANGELS OF MONS – OUR PROTECTIVE GOD – (2)* by Bruce Horner  
 pp 90-96 this work  
[www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) *1918 and God’s Deliverance*
- <sup>70</sup> [www.abebbooks.co.uk/Side-Angels-Story-Mons-Answer-Bowmen/22832647162/bd](http://www.abebbooks.co.uk/Side-Angels-Story-Mons-Answer-Bowmen/22832647162/bd) *On the Side of the Angels* by Harold Begbie, pp 77-79. An approach to finders of rare and out-of-print books may locate a lower-priced copy
- <sup>71</sup> [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/) *Royal Law – James 2v8*
- <sup>72</sup> [www.bbc.co.uk/history/historic\\_figures/unknown\\_warrior.shtml](http://www.bbc.co.uk/history/historic_figures/unknown_warrior.shtml) *The Unknown Warrior*
- <sup>73</sup> [webarchive.nationalarchives.gov.uk/20140805140025/http://www.veterans-uk.info/remembrance/unkown\\_warrior.html](http://webarchive.nationalarchives.gov.uk/20140805140025/http://www.veterans-uk.info/remembrance/unkown_warrior.html) *The Tomb of the Unknown Warrior*
- <sup>74</sup> [canadianhistoryworkshop.wordpress.com/2014/03/21/world-war-i-art-the-second-battle-of-ypres-22-april-to-25-may-1915-by-richard-jack/](http://canadianhistoryworkshop.wordpress.com/2014/03/21/world-war-i-art-the-second-battle-of-ypres-22-april-to-25-may-1915-by-richard-jack/)  
[en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Second\\_Battle\\_of\\_Ypres](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Second_Battle_of_Ypres) *Second Battle of Ypres*

- <sup>75</sup> [www.theage.com.au/national/diggers-at-fromelles-to-receive-more-concrete-tribute-20111018-1lyov.html](http://www.theage.com.au/national/diggers-at-fromelles-to-receive-more-concrete-tribute-20111018-1lyov.html) *Diggers at Fromelles to receive more concrete tribute*
- <sup>76</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle\\_of\\_Fromelles](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle_of_Fromelles) *Attack at Fromelles*
- <sup>77</sup> [www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=gr&GRid=12868925](http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=gr&GRid=12868925) *LT John "Jack" Kipling*
- <sup>78</sup> [www.guide-books.co.uk/kipling.html](http://www.guide-books.co.uk/kipling.html) *MY BOY JACK? A BIOGRAPHY OF JOHN KIP-LING*
- <sup>79</sup> [store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/) *The Unknown Soldier* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman
- <sup>80</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The\\_Unknown\\_Warrior](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Unknown_Warrior) *The Unknown Warrior*
- <sup>81</sup> [www.chick.com/](http://www.chick.com/) *The Secret History of the Jesuits* by Edmond Paris
- <sup>82</sup> [www.yumpu.com/en/document/read/36871027/vatican-assassins-eric-jon-phelpspdf](http://www.yumpu.com/en/document/read/36871027/vatican-assassins-eric-jon-phelpspdf) *Vatican Assassins* by Eric Jon Phelps, p 283
- [www.chick.com/](http://www.chick.com/) *Did The Catholic Church Give Us The Bible?* by David W. Daniels, p 111
- <sup>83</sup> *The Jesuit Conspiracy. The secret plan of the order with a preface by M. Victor Considérant* by Jacopo Leone, p 98 [books.google.co.uk/books?id=5SgE-AAAAQAAJ&printsec=frontcover&redir\\_esc=y#v=onepage&q&f=false](http://books.google.co.uk/books?id=5SgE-AAAAQAAJ&printsec=frontcover&redir_esc=y#v=onepage&q&f=false)
- <sup>84</sup> [vaticanassassins.org/](http://vaticanassassins.org/) *Store Vatican Assassins* by Eric Jon Phelps, CD, Chapter 21 p 485
- <sup>85</sup> [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/) *'O Biblios' – The Book*
- <sup>86</sup> [www.winstonchurchill.org/resources/speeches/1941-1945-war-leader/you-do-your-worst-and-we-will-do-our-best](http://www.winstonchurchill.org/resources/speeches/1941-1945-war-leader/you-do-your-worst-and-we-will-do-our-best) *You Do Your Worst – And We Will Do Our Best*
- [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Winston\\_Churchill](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Winston_Churchill) *Winston Churchill*
- <sup>87</sup> [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/james-white-dr-divietro-and-dawaite.php](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/james-white-dr-divietro-and-dawaite.php) *Reply to DiVietro's Attack on Gail Riplinger – Flotsam Flush*
- <sup>88</sup> [www.veterans.gc.ca/eng/remembrance/battles-and-stages/battle-of-ypres](http://www.veterans.gc.ca/eng/remembrance/battles-and-stages/battle-of-ypres) *2nd Battle of Ypres*
- [cmhs.ca/index.php/articles-members/2-uncategorised/13-article-ypres](http://cmhs.ca/index.php/articles-members/2-uncategorised/13-article-ypres) *The Second Battle of Ypres, April 1915*
- <sup>89</sup> [battlefields.ca/history-dvd-king-and-country-tv-series/](http://battlefields.ca/history-dvd-king-and-country-tv-series/) *HISTORY DVD: FOR KING AND COUNTRY* by Norm Christie, Episode 6
- <sup>90</sup> [www.macleans.ca/news/canada/canadas-involvement-in-wwi-began-with-a-telegram/](http://www.macleans.ca/news/canada/canadas-involvement-in-wwi-began-with-a-telegram/) *Canada's involvement in the First World War began with a telegram* by John Ward
- <sup>91</sup> [www.australianfamilystories.com.au/readers-hub/readers-project/percys-war/](http://www.australianfamilystories.com.au/readers-hub/readers-project/percys-war/) *Percy's War* by Jill Slack
- <sup>92</sup> *Royal Law – James* 2v8
- <sup>93</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/St-Julian-Battleground-Europe-Graham-Keech/dp/0850528399](http://www.amazon.co.uk/St-Julian-Battleground-Europe-Graham-Keech/dp/0850528399) *St Julien Ypres* by Graham Keech, p 59
- <sup>94</sup> [archive.cwgc.org/GetMultimedia.ashx?db=Catalog&type=default&fname=CWGC\\_2\\_1\\_ADD+6\\_2\\_96.pdf](http://archive.cwgc.org/GetMultimedia.ashx?db=Catalog&type=default&fname=CWGC_2_1_ADD+6_2_96.pdf) *Annual Report 2014-2015 CWGC* p 38
- <sup>95</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Guisborough](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Guisborough) *Guisborough*
- <sup>96</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Known\\_onto\\_God](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Known_onto_God) *Known Unto God*. When on the isle of Muck off the west coast of Scotland this writer saw three WW2 graves, two stating *A Sailor of the Royal Navy, 1939-1945 War, Known Unto God*, the third stating *A Sailor of the Mercantile*

*Marine, 1939-1945 War, Known Unto God.* The King James Bible goes “...unto the uttermost part of the earth” Acts 1:8

<sup>97</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/My\\_Boy\\_Jack](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/My_Boy_Jack) (film) *My Boy Jack* (film)

<sup>98</sup> [www.youtube.com/watch?v=2gDe2r-unIU&index=39&list=PL6C418B3813DBB380](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2gDe2r-unIU&index=39&list=PL6C418B3813DBB380) *The Great War – What are our Allies doing?* (Episode Ten) Part 3/4

<sup>99</sup> *The Men Behind the KJV* by Gustavus S. Paine, Preface [www.earnestlycontending-forthefait.com/Books/GustavusSPaine/GustavusPaine%27sTheMenBehindTheKingJames-Version01.html](http://www.earnestlycontending-forthefait.com/Books/GustavusSPaine/GustavusPaine%27sTheMenBehindTheKingJames-Version01.html)

[store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/) *The Men Behind the KJV* by Gustavus S. Paine, Preface p vii printed edition

<sup>100</sup> TBS *Quarterly Record*, No. 529, October to December 1994, pp 13-14

<sup>101</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle\\_of\\_Fromelles](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle_of_Fromelles) *Attack at Fromelles*

[www.aaptuk.org/media/news/2015/02/02/fromelles-the-recovery-and-identification-of-ww1-servicemen-](http://www.aaptuk.org/media/news/2015/02/02/fromelles-the-recovery-and-identification-of-ww1-servicemen-) *Fromelles- The Recovery and Identification of WW1 Servicemen*

[www.anesfhs.org.uk/component/jem/event/206-glw2019nov](http://www.anesfhs.org.uk/component/jem/event/206-glw2019nov) *WW1 soldiers and the Fromelles DNA project*

<sup>102</sup> [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) *Breaking News – The Empty Tomb*

<sup>103</sup> [store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/) *Bible Believers’ Bulletin* April 1990, *On Being Alone*, p 14

<sup>104</sup> [military.wikia.org/wiki/Myron\\_N.\\_Ranney](http://military.wikia.org/wiki/Myron_N._Ranney) *Myron N. Ranney*

[www.amazon.co.uk/Band-Brothers-Stephen-Ambrose/dp/0743429907](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Band-Brothers-Stephen-Ambrose/dp/0743429907) *Band of Brothers* by Stephen Ambrose, Pocket Books Edition 2001, p 307

<sup>105</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Anzac\\_Day](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Anzac_Day) *Anzac Day*

<sup>106</sup> [archive.org/details/gallipoli0000alan](http://archive.org/details/gallipoli0000alan) *Gallipoli* by Alan Moorhead

<sup>107</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/29th\\_Division\\_\(United\\_Kingdom\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/29th_Division_(United_Kingdom)) *29<sup>th</sup> Division (United Kingdom)*

<sup>108</sup> *Gallipoli* p 120

<sup>109</sup> [slideplayer.com/slide/14778228/](http://slideplayer.com/slide/14778228/) Slide 5/10

<sup>110</sup> [store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/)

*Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 911-912

*The Book of Song of Solomon* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman, pp 105-107

<sup>111</sup> [www.myjewishlearning.com/article/shavuot-101/](http://www.myjewishlearning.com/article/shavuot-101/) *Shavuot 101*

<sup>112</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Passover](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Passover) *Passover*

<sup>113</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shavuot](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shavuot) *Shavuot*

<sup>114</sup> [www.myjewishlearning.com/article/passover-2023/](http://www.myjewishlearning.com/article/passover-2023/) *Passover 2023*

<sup>115</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Easter](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Easter) *Easter*

<sup>116</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Whitsun](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Whitsun) *Whitsun*

<sup>117</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle\\_of\\_the\\_Somme](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle_of_the_Somme) *Battle of the Somme*

<sup>118</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Siegfried\\_Sassoon](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Siegfried_Sassoon) *Siegfried Sassoon*

<sup>119</sup> [www.bbc.co.uk/history/historic\\_figures/sassoon\\_siegfried.shtml](http://www.bbc.co.uk/history/historic_figures/sassoon_siegfried.shtml) *Siegfried Sassoon (1886-1967)*

<sup>120</sup> *Ruckman Reference Bible* p 1608



- <sup>121</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Complete-Memoirs-Sherston-Paper-Covered-Editions/dp/0571099130](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Complete-Memoirs-Sherston-Paper-Covered-Editions/dp/0571099130) *The Complete Memoirs of George Sherston* by Siegfried Sassoon, Faber and Faber 1972
- <sup>122</sup> [www.poetryfoundation.org/poets/siegfried-sassoon](http://www.poetryfoundation.org/poets/siegfried-sassoon) *Siegfried Sassoon*
- <sup>123</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Siegfried-Sassoon-Poets-Pilgrimage/dp/057501721X](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Siegfried-Sassoon-Poets-Pilgrimage/dp/057501721X) *Siegfried Sassoon: Poet's Pilgrimage* by Felicitas Corrigan
- <sup>124</sup> [store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/) *The Corrupt Catholic Cult* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman
- <sup>125</sup> [www.poemhunter.com/siegfried-sassoon/](http://www.poemhunter.com/siegfried-sassoon/) *Siegfried Sassoon Poems*
- <sup>126</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Collected-Poems-Siegfried-Sassoon/dp/0571132626](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Collected-Poems-Siegfried-Sassoon/dp/0571132626) *Collected Poems* by Siegfried Sassoon
- <sup>127</sup> [www.poemhunter.com/poem/villon/](http://www.poemhunter.com/poem/villon/) *Villon*  
[www.poemhunter.com/poem/at-carnoy/](http://www.poemhunter.com/poem/at-carnoy/) *At Carnoy*  
[www.poemhunter.com/poem/autumn-5/](http://www.poemhunter.com/poem/autumn-5/) *Autumn*
- <sup>128</sup> [holts.co.uk/](http://holts.co.uk/) *Holts Tours*
- <sup>129</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ben\\_Cross](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ben_Cross) *Ben Cross*
- <sup>130</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Chariots\\_of\\_Fire](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Chariots_of_Fire) *Chariots of Fire*
- <sup>131</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Royal\\_Welch\\_Fusiliers](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Royal_Welch_Fusiliers) *Royal Welch Fusiliers*
- <sup>132</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Goodbye-That-Penguin-Modern-Classics/dp/0140014438/ref=mon-arch\\_sidesheet](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Goodbye-That-Penguin-Modern-Classics/dp/0140014438/ref=mon-arch_sidesheet) *Goodbye to All That* by Robert Graves, Penguin Modern Classics 1971, p 174
- <sup>133</sup> *The Complete Memoirs of George Sherston* pp 332ff
- <sup>134</sup> *The Complete Memoirs of George Sherston* p 336
- <sup>135</sup> [www.poemhunter.com/poem/the-road-46/](http://www.poemhunter.com/poem/the-road-46/) *The Road*
- <sup>136</sup> *The Complete Memoirs of George Sherston* pp 341ff
- <sup>137</sup> *Goodbye to All That* p 174
- <sup>138</sup> *Siegfried Sassoon: Poet's Pilgrimage* pp 19-20
- <sup>139</sup> *Goodbye to All That* p 174
- <sup>140</sup> [www.1914-18.co.uk/sassoon/biographical%20table.htm](http://www.1914-18.co.uk/sassoon/biographical%20table.htm) *OUTLINE OF SIEGFRIED SASSOON'S MILITARY SERVICE*
- <sup>141</sup> *The Complete Memoirs of George Sherston* pp 440-449
- <sup>142</sup> *The Complete Memoirs of George Sherston* p 496
- <sup>143</sup> *The Complete Memoirs of George Sherston* pp 556-557
- <sup>144</sup> *The Complete Memoirs of George Sherston* pp 540-541
- <sup>145</sup> *The Complete Memoirs of George Sherston* pp 652-653
- <sup>146</sup> [www.medicalnewstoday.com/articles/325578](http://www.medicalnewstoday.com/articles/325578) *What is survivor's guilt?*
- <sup>147</sup> *Siegfried Sassoon: Poet's Pilgrimage* pp 32, 233
- <sup>148</sup> [www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/psalms-117-2-kjv.php](http://www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/psalms-117-2-kjv.php)
- <sup>149</sup> [www.poemhunter.com/poem/the-redeemer/](http://www.poemhunter.com/poem/the-redeemer/) *The Redeemer*
- <sup>150</sup> [www.2tim215truth.com/2019/03/verse-of-day-isaiah-535-kjv.html](http://www.2tim215truth.com/2019/03/verse-of-day-isaiah-535-kjv.html)
- <sup>151</sup> [www.geocaching.com/geocache/GC1FECN\\_cobbers?guid=31cf6089-2561-445a-9626-cfb511f098fe](http://www.geocaching.com/geocache/GC1FECN_cobbers?guid=31cf6089-2561-445a-9626-cfb511f098fe) *Cobbers*
- <sup>152</sup> [www.youtube.com/watch?v=Gec7OUrj87M](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Gec7OUrj87M) *Band Of Brothers – Intro – Theme Song*

- [www.wearethemighty.com/articles/band-of-brothers-veteran-ed-tipper-dies](http://www.wearethemighty.com/articles/band-of-brothers-veteran-ed-tipper-dies) "*Band of Brothers*" veteran Ed Tipper dies
- <sup>153</sup> [www.pinterest.co.uk/pin/454933999835980847/](http://www.pinterest.co.uk/pin/454933999835980847/)
- <sup>154</sup> [library.timelesstruths.org/music/The Love of God/](http://library.timelesstruths.org/music/The_Love_of_God/) *The Love of God* by Frederick M. Lehman
- [www.hymntime.com/tch/](http://www.hymntime.com/tch/) *The Cyber Hymnal, Titles, The Love of God (Lehman)*
- <sup>155</sup> [www.youtube.com/watch?v=v8YOPj5TnUM](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=v8YOPj5TnUM) *Here is love, vast as the ocean – Robin Mark*
- [www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/john-6-51-kjv.php](http://www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/john-6-51-kjv.php)
- <sup>156</sup> [www.youtube.com/watch?NR=1&feature=endscreen&v=9Wnx9MCmI48](http://www.youtube.com/watch?NR=1&feature=endscreen&v=9Wnx9MCmI48) *The Great War - The Devil is Coming (Episode Thirteen (!)) Part 4/4*
- [www.gettyimages.ca/photos/cambrai-wwi](http://www.gettyimages.ca/photos/cambrai-wwi)
- <sup>157</sup> *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 6-7, 769-771, 931, 1105
- [store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/)
- Mark of The Beast* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman, Chapters 2-4
- Theological Studies* 18 by Dr Peter S. Ruckman, pp 23-57
- The Book of Genesis* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman, p 77
- <sup>158</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gay\\_pride](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gay_pride) *Gay Pride*
- <sup>159</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Feminism](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Feminism) *Feminism*
- <sup>160</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle\\_of\\_Passchendaele](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle_of_Passchendaele) *Battle of Passchendaele*
- Purnell's History of the First World War* Volume 6 p 2358
- <sup>161</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Harry\\_Patch](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Harry_Patch) *Harry Patch*
- [www.amazon.co.uk/Last-Fighting-Tommy-Trenches-1898-2009/dp/1408855607](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Last-Fighting-Tommy-Trenches-1898-2009/dp/1408855607) *The Last Fighting Tommy* by Harry Patch and Richard van Emden
- [www.pinterest.co.uk/pin/517984394619173128/](http://www.pinterest.co.uk/pin/517984394619173128/)
- <sup>162</sup> [news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/england/somerset/6760973.stm](http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/england/somerset/6760973.stm) *WWI veteran celebrates 109 years*
- <sup>163</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mystery\\_of\\_Celtic\\_Wood](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mystery_of_Celtic_Wood) *Mystery of Celtic Wood*
- <sup>164</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/They-Called-Passchendaele-Battle-Fought-ebook/dp/B004LLIHQ8](http://www.amazon.co.uk/They-Called-Passchendaele-Battle-Fought-ebook/dp/B004LLIHQ8) *They Called It Passchendaele* by Lyn MacDonald, pp 139, 228-229
- <sup>165</sup> [www.journal.forces.gc.ca/vo9/no2/09-leach-eng.asp](http://www.journal.forces.gc.ca/vo9/no2/09-leach-eng.asp) *Passchendaele - Canada's Other Vimy Ridge* by Norman S. Leach
- <sup>166</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Chemical\\_weapons\\_in\\_World\\_War\\_I](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Chemical_weapons_in_World_War_I) *Chemical weapons in World War I*
- <sup>167</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Herbert\\_Read](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Herbert_Read) *Herbert Read*
- Purnell's History of the First World War* Volume 6 pp 2653ff
- [www1centenary.oucs.ox.ac.uk/war-as-revolution/in-retreat/](http://www1centenary.oucs.ox.ac.uk/war-as-revolution/in-retreat/) *The smaller picture: 'In Retreat' – Herbert Read and the 2nd Green Howards during the German March Offensive 1918*
- <sup>168</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/First-World-War-Cyril-Falls/dp/1473825490](http://www.amazon.co.uk/First-World-War-Cyril-Falls/dp/1473825490) *The First World War* by Cyril Falls, pp 320, 323
- <sup>169</sup> *THE ANGELS OF MONS – OUR PROTECTIVE GOD – (2)* by Bruce Horner
- <sup>170</sup> [www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/deuteronomy-4-9-kjv.php](http://www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/deuteronomy-4-9-kjv.php)

<sup>171</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/?title=Battle\\_of\\_Stalingrad](http://en.wikipedia.org/?title=Battle_of_Stalingrad) *Battle of Stalingrad*

<sup>172</sup> [www.history.com/topics/world-war-ii/battle-of-stalingrad](http://www.history.com/topics/world-war-ii/battle-of-stalingrad) *Battle of Stalingrad*

<sup>173</sup> [ww2today.com/11th-november-1942-germans-try-to-take-the-last-pockets-of-stalingrad](http://ww2today.com/11th-november-1942-germans-try-to-take-the-last-pockets-of-stalingrad)  
*Germans try to take the last pockets of Stalingrad*

<sup>174</sup> *Purnell's History of The Second World War* Volume 3 *Stalingrad: The Onslaught* by Alan Clark, p 1148

<sup>175</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Stalingrad-Heinz-Schroter/dp/B0000CKMHH](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Stalingrad-Heinz-Schroter/dp/B0000CKMHH) *Stalingrad* by Heinz Schröter, pp 238-240, 250-253, 315-316. For a detailed – and grim - account of the battle in the form of a fact-based novel see *Stalingrad* by Theodore Plievier [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Theodor\\_Plievier](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Theodor_Plievier)

<sup>176</sup> 'O Biblios' - *The Book* pp 42-43

<sup>177</sup> *Ruckman Reference Bible* p 1421 and Appendix 16 *Catholic Conspiracies*

<sup>178</sup> *The Secret History of The Jesuits* Section V Chapter 2 *Preparations for the Second World War* pp 127-130

<sup>179</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/?title=Franz\\_von\\_Papen](http://en.wikipedia.org/?title=Franz_von_Papen) *Franz von Papen*

Von Papen was expelled from the USA during WW1 for espionage and plotting sabotage. During the autumn of 1914, while attached to the German Embassy in Washington D.C., Papen's "natural proclivities for intrigue got him involved in espionage activities"...As a result, some sixteen months into the European War he was expelled from the United States for alleged complicity in the planning of acts of sabotage, such as the Vanceboro international bridge bombing to destroy US rail lines... On 28 December 1915, he was declared persona non grata after his exposure and was recalled to Germany... Setting out on the journey, his luggage was confiscated, and 126 cheque stubs were found showing payments to his agents. Papen went on to report on American attitudes, both to General Erich von Falkenhayn and to Wilhelm II, the German Emperor.

<sup>180</sup> *The Secret History of the Jesuits* Introduction

<sup>181</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Architecture\\_of\\_cathedrals\\_and\\_great\\_churches](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Architecture_of_cathedrals_and_great_churches) *Architecture of cathedrals and great churches*

<sup>182</sup> [store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/)

*The History of the New Testament Church, Volumes I, II* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman

*The Book of Revelation* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman, Chapter 13

<sup>183</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Salisbury\\_Cathedral](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Salisbury_Cathedral) *Salisbury Cathedral*

<sup>184</sup> *Ruckman Reference Bible* p 1237

[store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/) *The Book of Matthew* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman, pp 24ff

<sup>185</sup> 'O Biblios' – *The Book* pp 14-15, 72

[www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/) *The Great Bible Robbery* Figure 3

[store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/) *The Monarch of the Books* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman, pp 6-7

<sup>186</sup> [www.avpublications.com/avnew/home.html](http://www.avpublications.com/avnew/home.html) *New Age Bible Versions* by Gail Riplinger

<sup>187</sup> [i.pinimg.com/originals/18/63/5a/18635ac01cd2be88ad8080957cc483ed.jpg](http://i.pinimg.com/originals/18/63/5a/18635ac01cd2be88ad8080957cc483ed.jpg)

<sup>188</sup> *Ruckman Reference Bible* p 1014

<sup>189</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/True-False-David-Otis-Fuller/dp/0825426146](http://www.amazon.co.uk/True-False-David-Otis-Fuller/dp/0825426146) *True or False? 2<sup>nd</sup> Edition* by Dr David Otis Fuller, p 108

- <sup>190</sup> [archive.org/details/TheKingJamesVersionDefended/mode/2up](http://archive.org/details/TheKingJamesVersionDefended/mode/2up) *The King James Version Defended* 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition by Dr Edward F. Hills, Chapter 6 p 146 printed edition  
[www.amazon.co.uk/King-James-Version-Defended/dp/0915923009](http://www.amazon.co.uk/King-James-Version-Defended/dp/0915923009) *The King James Version Defended* 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition by Dr Edward F. Hills, Chapter 6 p 146  
[www.scribd.com/document/298396396/Believing-Bible-Study-Edward-F-Hills-pdf](http://www.scribd.com/document/298396396/Believing-Bible-Study-Edward-F-Hills-pdf) *Believing Bible Study* 2<sup>nd</sup> Edition by Dr Edward F. Hills, Chapter 5 p 118 printed edition  
[www.amazon.co.uk/Believing-Bible-Study-Edward-Hills/dp/0915923017](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Believing-Bible-Study-Edward-Hills/dp/0915923017) *Believing Bible Study* 2<sup>nd</sup> Edition by Dr Edward F. Hills, Chapter 5 p 118
- <sup>191</sup> [brandplucked.webs.com/kjbarticles.htm](http://brandplucked.webs.com/kjbarticles.htm) *Matthew 6:13 & Luke 11:2-4 The Lord's Prayer - Is your bible a "Catholic" bible?*
- <sup>192</sup> [www.tbsbibles.org/page/articles](http://www.tbsbibles.org/page/articles) *The Power and the Glory*
- <sup>193</sup> *Believing Bible Study* 2<sup>nd</sup> Edition p 117 printed edition
- <sup>194</sup> [store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/) *The Christian's Handbook of Manuscript Evidence* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman, p 208
- <sup>195</sup> *The King James Version Defended* 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition Chapter 6 p 147 printed edition
- <sup>196</sup> *The King James Version Defended* 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition Chapter 6 p 148 printed edition
- <sup>197</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sword\\_Beach](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sword_Beach) *Sword Beach*
- <sup>198</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Longest-Day-June-1944/dp/0671890913](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Longest-Day-June-1944/dp/0671890913) *The Longest Day* by Cornelius Ryan, Four Square Edition 1962, et seq pp 116n, 53, 55, 94-95, 183, 229-230
- <sup>199</sup> *Mark of the Beast*  
*The Book of Revelation*
- <sup>200</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Struggle-Europe-Wordsworth-Military-Library/dp/1853266779](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Struggle-Europe-Wordsworth-Military-Library/dp/1853266779) *The Struggle for Europe* by Chester Wilmot, Collins 1952, p 17
- <sup>201</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/We-Have-Guardian-Instances-Intervention/dp/0852051042](http://www.amazon.co.uk/We-Have-Guardian-Instances-Intervention/dp/0852051042) *We Have a Guardian* by W. B. Grant, p 46
- <sup>202</sup> *The Longest Day* p 53
- <sup>203</sup> *The Struggle for Europe* p 233
- <sup>204</sup> *Purnell's History of the 2<sup>nd</sup> World War* Volume 5 pp 1892-1893
- <sup>205</sup> *The Longest Day* pp 95-96
- <sup>206</sup> *Purnell's History of the 2<sup>nd</sup> World War* Volume 5 pp 1834-1835, 1837-1838  
[worldwar2headquarters.com/HTML/normandy/HobartsFunnies/hf\\_petard.html](http://worldwar2headquarters.com/HTML/normandy/HobartsFunnies/hf_petard.html) *Petard Spigot Mortar*  
[www.amazon.co.uk/Churchills-Secret-Weapons-Hobarts-Funnies/dp/1844154645](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Churchills-Secret-Weapons-Hobarts-Funnies/dp/1844154645) *Churchill's Secret Weapons* by Patrick Delaforce, Robert Hale Edition 2000, Chapter 6  
[www.amazon.co.uk/79th-Armoured-Division-Funnies-Profile/dp/0853830827](http://www.amazon.co.uk/79th-Armoured-Division-Funnies-Profile/dp/0853830827) *79<sup>th</sup> Armoured Division Hobo's Funnies* by Nigel Duncan, pp 4-16  
[www.amazon.co.uk/Vanguard-Victory-79th-Armoured-Division/dp/011290422X](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Vanguard-Victory-79th-Armoured-Division/dp/011290422X) *Vanguard of Victory The 79<sup>th</sup> Armoured Division* by David Fletcher, Chapter 3 pp 73-83
- <sup>207</sup> *The Longest Day* pp 183, 229-230
- <sup>208</sup> *Purnell's History of the 2<sup>nd</sup> World War* Volume 5 p 1898
- <sup>209</sup> *Purnell's History of the 2<sup>nd</sup> World War* Volume 5 p 1889

- <sup>210</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/D-Day-Hero-CMS-Stanley-Hollis/dp/0750936940](http://www.amazon.co.uk/D-Day-Hero-CMS-Stanley-Hollis/dp/0750936940) *D-Day Hero, CSM Stanley Hollis VC* by Mike Morgan, Sutton Publishing Edition 2004, pp 62, 95  
[www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) *D-Day Normandy June 6th 1944 and God's Conquest* pp 3-4
- <sup>211</sup> *Band of Brothers* p 88
- <sup>212</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/LAST-100-DAYS-John-Toland/dp/0553103490](http://www.amazon.co.uk/LAST-100-DAYS-John-Toland/dp/0553103490) *The Last Hundred Days* by John Toland, Mayflower Books Edition 1973, p 655
- <sup>213</sup> [www.scripture-images.com/desktop-wallpaper/kjv/zechariah-14-9-kjv-hd-wallpaper.php](http://www.scripture-images.com/desktop-wallpaper/kjv/zechariah-14-9-kjv-hd-wallpaper.php)
- <sup>214</sup> [www.pinterest.com.au/pin/505529126908043089/](http://www.pinterest.com.au/pin/505529126908043089/) *Handley Page Halifax Bomber*
- <sup>215</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Victoria\\_Cross](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Victoria_Cross) *Victoria Cross*
- <sup>216</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/C-s-Air-John-Frayn-Turner/dp/B008TQQSTO](http://www.amazon.co.uk/C-s-Air-John-Frayn-Turner/dp/B008TQQSTO) *V.C. 's of the Air* by John Frayn Turner, pp 128-133
- <sup>217</sup> [www.warhistoryonline.com/war-articles/remembering-1944-nuremberg-raid.html](http://www.warhistoryonline.com/war-articles/remembering-1944-nuremberg-raid.html) *Remembering the 1944 Nuremberg Raid*  
[ww2today.com/31-march-2014-heavy-losses-as-raf-bomber-command-targets-nuremberg](http://ww2today.com/31-march-2014-heavy-losses-as-raf-bomber-command-targets-nuremberg)  
*Heavy losses as RAF Bomber Command targets Nuremberg*
- <sup>218</sup> [www.john-stevens.com/2013/08/unmerited-glory-remarkable-testimony-of.html](http://www.john-stevens.com/2013/08/unmerited-glory-remarkable-testimony-of.html) *Unmerited Glory: The Remarkable Testimony of Cyril Barton VC*
- <sup>219</sup> [www.2tim215truth.com/2019/02/verse-of-day-psalms-234-kjv.html](http://www.2tim215truth.com/2019/02/verse-of-day-psalms-234-kjv.html)
- <sup>220</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Andrew\\_Mynarski](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Andrew_Mynarski) *Andrew Mynarski*
- <sup>221</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Avro\\_Lancaster\\_FM213](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Avro_Lancaster_FM213) *Avro Lancaster FM213*
- <sup>222</sup> [www.nowandthenmagazine.co.uk/magazines/](http://www.nowandthenmagazine.co.uk/magazines/) *Now & Then* No. 82 April/May 2013 *The Final Salute* by Peter Cook, pp 6-7
- <sup>223</sup> *V.C. 's of the Air* pp 139-142
- <sup>224</sup> [archive.macleans.ca/article/2002/6/10/keeping-alive-a-heros-death](http://archive.macleans.ca/article/2002/6/10/keeping-alive-a-heros-death) *Keeping alive a hero's death* by Danylo Hawaleshka
- <sup>225</sup> [www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/3-john-1-14-kjv.php](http://www.scripture-images.com/bible-verse/kjv/3-john-1-14-kjv.php)
- <sup>226</sup> [britains-smallwars.com/campaigns/korea/page.php?art\\_url=imjin](http://britains-smallwars.com/campaigns/korea/page.php?art_url=imjin) *Britain's Small Wars, Korea 1950-1953, The Battle of the Imjin River*
- <sup>227</sup> [www.koreatimes.co.kr/www/news/nation/2010/06/113\\_68240.html](http://www.koreatimes.co.kr/www/news/nation/2010/06/113_68240.html) *Korean War never ended, still ongoing* by Jung Sung-ki Staff reporter
- <sup>228</sup> [fundamental.org/kjv-church-directory/wpbdp\\_category/south-korea/](http://fundamental.org/kjv-church-directory/wpbdp_category/south-korea/) *South Korea*
- <sup>229</sup> [www.northkoreanchristians.com/index.html](http://www.northkoreanchristians.com/index.html) *North Korean Christians*
- <sup>230</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Anthony\\_Farrar-Hockley](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Anthony_Farrar-Hockley) *Anthony Farrar-Hockley*
- <sup>231</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Edge-Sword-War-twentieth-century/dp/0352309776/ref=mon-arch\\_sidesheet](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Edge-Sword-War-twentieth-century/dp/0352309776/ref=mon-arch_sidesheet) *The Edge of the Sword* by Anthony Farrar-Hockley, Star, 1981, pp 199-201
- <sup>232</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Terence\\_Edward\\_Waters](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Terence_Edward_Waters) *Terry Waters (British Army officer)*  
[www.dnw.co.uk/auction-archive/past-catalogues/lot.php?auction\\_id=577&lot\\_uid=387430](http://www.dnw.co.uk/auction-archive/past-catalogues/lot.php?auction_id=577&lot_uid=387430)  
*Orders, Decorations, Medals and Militaria (17 February 2021) Lot 192*
- <sup>233</sup> [m.koreatimes.co.kr/pages/article.asp?newsIdx=201324&WA](http://m.koreatimes.co.kr/pages/article.asp?newsIdx=201324&WA) *Heroes and 'Hell Joseon'* by Andrew Salmon

- [www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-9196989/George-Cross-lieutenant-died-PoW-camp-Korean-War-set-fetch-180-000-auction.html](http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-9196989/George-Cross-lieutenant-died-PoW-camp-Korean-War-set-fetch-180-000-auction.html) *The officer who chose DEATH over denouncing Britain: George Cross of lieutenant who died in PoW camp after refusing offer to make propaganda broadcast during Korean War is set to fetch £180,000 at auction*
- <sup>234</sup> [www.scripture-images.com/4k-wallpaper/kjv/luke-9-23-kjv-4k-wallpaper.php](http://www.scripture-images.com/4k-wallpaper/kjv/luke-9-23-kjv-4k-wallpaper.php)
- <sup>235</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Shepherd-Frederick-Forsyth/dp/0099559862](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Shepherd-Frederick-Forsyth/dp/0099559862) *The Shepherd* by Frederick Forsyth  
[en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The\\_Shepherd](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Shepherd) *The Shepherd*  
[www.vintagewings.ca/en-ca/vintagenews.aspx](http://www.vintagewings.ca/en-ca/vintagenews.aspx) *Aviation Culture*
- <sup>236</sup> [news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/england/north\\_yorkshire/7715345.stm](http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/england/north_yorkshire/7715345.stm) *Blind Pilot guided to land by RAF*
- <sup>237</sup> *The Complete Memoirs of George Sherston* p 639
- <sup>238</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Winged-Dagger-adventures-Special-Service/dp/B0006DACWW](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Winged-Dagger-adventures-Special-Service/dp/B0006DACWW) *Winged Dagger, adventures on Special Service* by Roy Farran, p 383
- <sup>239</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Quartered-Safe-George-MacDonald-Fraser/dp/0007105932](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Quartered-Safe-George-MacDonald-Fraser/dp/0007105932) *Quartered Safe Out Here* by George MacDonald Fraser, pp 264-265
- <sup>240</sup> *You Do Your Worst – And We Will Do Our Best*  
Winston Churchill
- <sup>241</sup> [the-ten.blogspot.co.uk/2013/07/reaping-whirlwind.html](http://the-ten.blogspot.co.uk/2013/07/reaping-whirlwind.html)  
[mynameismimi-c.blogspot.co.uk/](http://mynameismimi-c.blogspot.co.uk/)  
[www.stretcherbearers.com/Gallery/Sword.html](http://www.stretcherbearers.com/Gallery/Sword.html)
- <sup>242</sup> [www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/11414052/Legal-battle-looms-over-Christian-school-closure-in-British-Values-row.html](http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/11414052/Legal-battle-looms-over-Christian-school-closure-in-British-Values-row.html) *Legal battle looms over Christian school closure in 'British Values' row* by John Bingham  
[www.christian.org.uk/news/nicky-morgan-unapologetic-over-british-values-rules/?e300115](http://www.christian.org.uk/news/nicky-morgan-unapologetic-over-british-values-rules/?e300115) *Nicky Morgan 'unapologetic' over 'British values' rules*  
[www.christian.org.uk/news/christian-school-will-close-nicky-morgan-confirms/?e270215](http://www.christian.org.uk/news/christian-school-will-close-nicky-morgan-confirms/?e270215) *Christian school will close, Nicky Morgan confirms*  
[www.christian.org.uk/news/christian-school-wont-be-challenging-closure/?e130315](http://www.christian.org.uk/news/christian-school-wont-be-challenging-closure/?e130315) *Christian school won't be challenging closure*
- <sup>243</sup> *The Men Behind the KJV* Preface p vii printed edition
- <sup>244</sup> [www.imdb.com/title/tt1021794/characters/nm0823313](http://www.imdb.com/title/tt1021794/characters/nm0823313) *Monarchy with David Starkey*
- <sup>245</sup> [petersengland.blogspot.co.uk/2012/02/coronation-of-queen-elizabeth-ii.html](http://petersengland.blogspot.co.uk/2012/02/coronation-of-queen-elizabeth-ii.html) *This England*
- <sup>246</sup> *Royal Law – James* 2v8
- <sup>247</sup> p 116 this work  
*D-Day Hero, CSM Stanley Hollis VC* pp 62, 95  
*D-Day Normandy June 6th 1944 and God's Conquest* pp 3-4
- <sup>248</sup> [twitter.com/notesfasmil/status/910752439606943744](https://twitter.com/notesfasmil/status/910752439606943744) #RIP David Shepherd: renowned mil and wildlife artist #Arnhem painting graced Ryan's book 'A Bridge Too Far'
- <sup>249</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Arnhem#The\\_Battle\\_of\\_Arnhem](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Arnhem#The_Battle_of_Arnhem) *Arnhem*  
[spitfirespares.co.uk/Arnhem%201.html](http://spitfirespares.co.uk/Arnhem%201.html) *The Battle of Arnhem*

[www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) *The KJB Hallowed* p 16

<sup>250</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Bridge-Too-Far-Battle-Arnheim/dp/0340933984](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Bridge-Too-Far-Battle-Arnheim/dp/0340933984) *A Bridge Too Far* by Cornelius Ryan, p 430

<sup>251</sup> *Band of Brothers* p 88

<sup>252</sup> [www.bbc.co.uk/stoke/features/2005/02/sound\\_of\\_battle.shtml](http://www.bbc.co.uk/stoke/features/2005/02/sound_of_battle.shtml) *Sound of Battle - Christian faith at War*

<sup>253</sup> [www.facebook.com/watch/?v=864832114079161](http://www.facebook.com/watch/?v=864832114079161) *Foundation Weekend – “For the might of thine arm”*

<sup>254</sup> *The Men Behind the KJV* Chapter 15 *The Bible of the Learned Men Lasts* pp 182-183 printed edition

[christianhistoryinstitute.org/magazine/article/they-said-it-best-kjv](http://christianhistoryinstitute.org/magazine/article/they-said-it-best-kjv) *They said it best*

<sup>255</sup> [www.liberator.net/articles/SloanGary/Shaw.html](http://www.liberator.net/articles/SloanGary/Shaw.html) *George Bernard Shaw: Mystic or Atheist?* by Gary Sloan

<sup>256</sup> [www.scripture-images.com/desktop-wallpaper/kjv/jeremiah-15-16-kjv-hd-wallpaper.php](http://www.scripture-images.com/desktop-wallpaper/kjv/jeremiah-15-16-kjv-hd-wallpaper.php)

<sup>257</sup> [www.loc.gov/rr/rarebook/catalog/drake/drake-8-invincible.html](http://www.loc.gov/rr/rarebook/catalog/drake/drake-8-invincible.html) *Sir Francis Drake: A Pictorial Biography* by Hans P. Kraus

<sup>258</sup> [www.librarycat.org/lib/Oz\\_Brett/item/136933716](http://www.librarycat.org/lib/Oz_Brett/item/136933716) *The Defeat of the Spanish Armada – God’s Hand in History* by D. C. Relf

<sup>259</sup> [protestanttruth.com/pts-publications/](http://protestanttruth.com/pts-publications/) *Our Protestant Throne and Constitution* by J. A. Kensit, p 13, now *Britain’s Fight for Civil and Religious Liberties*

<sup>260</sup> [ensignmessage.com/articles/copy-of-a-letter-to-john-foxe/](http://ensignmessage.com/articles/copy-of-a-letter-to-john-foxe/) *Copy of a letter to John Foxe By Francis Drake*

[www.abebooks.co.uk/book-search/title/the-great-enterprise-the-history-of-the-spanish-armada/author/stephen-usherwood/](http://www.abebooks.co.uk/book-search/title/the-great-enterprise-the-history-of-the-spanish-armada/author/stephen-usherwood/) *The Great Enterprise* edited by Stephen Usherwood, pp 39-40

<sup>261</sup> [www.afcu.org.uk/](http://www.afcu.org.uk/) *Armed Forces Christian Union*

<sup>262</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Faith-Front-Line-Liesel-Parkinson-ebook/dp/B00MOIUO48](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Faith-Front-Line-Liesel-Parkinson-ebook/dp/B00MOIUO48) *Faith on the Frontline* compiled by Liesel Parkinson, pp 70-72, 76, 90, 102, 161, 163-165

<sup>263</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle\\_of\\_Saipan#Civilian\\_casualties](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle_of_Saipan#Civilian_casualties) *Civilian Casualties*

<sup>264</sup> [www.worldcat.org/title/59th-division-its-war-story/oclc/11398674](http://www.worldcat.org/title/59th-division-its-war-story/oclc/11398674) *The 59th Division Its War Story* by Peter Knight, Chapter 8 pp 88-89

<sup>265</sup> [www.amazon.co.uk/Chemical-Engineering-Process-Design-Economics/dp/0471082767](http://www.amazon.co.uk/Chemical-Engineering-Process-Design-Economics/dp/0471082767) *A Guide to Chemical Engineering Process Design and Economics* by Gael D. Ulrich, Chapter 9 pp 411-413

<sup>266</sup> [www.abebooks.co.uk/first-edition/Platoon-Commander-Memoirs-Royal-Engineers-Officer/4996305701/bd](http://www.abebooks.co.uk/first-edition/Platoon-Commander-Memoirs-Royal-Engineers-Officer/4996305701/bd) *Platoon Commander (Memoirs of a Royal Engineer Officer)* by Peter Steadman, Chapter 5 pp 84-86

<sup>267</sup> [kinooze.com/david-and-goliath/](http://kinooze.com/david-and-goliath/)

<sup>268</sup> [lookingtowardportugal.blogspot.com/2014/06/the-longest-day.html](http://lookingtowardportugal.blogspot.com/2014/06/the-longest-day.html) *The Longest Day*

<sup>269</sup> *Band Of Brothers – Intro – Theme Song*

“*Band of Brothers*” veteran Ed Tipper dies

<sup>270</sup> [store.kjv1611.org/](http://store.kjv1611.org/)

*Bible Believers’ Bulletin*



September 1987 p 6

November 2014 p 22

November 2016 p 27

July 2020 p 25

<sup>271</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/2nd\\_Armored\\_Division\\_\(United\\_States\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/2nd_Armored_Division_(United_States)) *2<sup>nd</sup> Armored Division (United States)*

<sup>272</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/German\\_occupation\\_of\\_the\\_Channel\\_Islands#Liberation\\_2\\_German\\_occupation\\_of\\_the\\_Channel\\_Islands](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/German_occupation_of_the_Channel_Islands#Liberation_2_German_occupation_of_the_Channel_Islands)

<sup>273</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battery\\_Moltke](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battery_Moltke) *Battery Moltke*

<sup>274</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hohlgangsanlage\\_8](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hohlgangsanlage_8) *Hohlgangsanlage 8*

<sup>275</sup> [jerseyeveningpost.com/news/2018/05/09/celebrating-freedom-for-the-past-73-years/](https://jerseyeveningpost.com/news/2018/05/09/celebrating-freedom-for-the-past-73-years/) *Celebrating freedom for the past 73 years*. Major Le Brocq's account was taken from the Jersey War Tunnels exhibition.

<sup>276</sup> [twitter.com/richnchrist57/status/1289683085248716803?lang=da](https://twitter.com/richnchrist57/status/1289683085248716803?lang=da)

<sup>277</sup> [slideplayer.com/slide/13595551/](https://slideplayer.com/slide/13595551/) *Where are we going...where have we been?* Slide 63/69